



Sir Ares, Goodnight!

Yan An

Language: English

557.5K words | Ongoing

289.0K

Views

9.2

★ ★ ★ ★ ★ Rating >

Even after two lifetimes, Rose still could not melt the ice-cold heart of Jay Ares. Heartbroken, she decides to live under the guise of an idiot, tricking him and running away with their two children. This infuriates Sir Ares to no end, and everyone around them is certain that this will prove to be Rose's ultimate demise. However, upon the next day, the great Sir Ares is seen getting down on one knee in the middle of the street, coaxing the little brat, "Please be good and come home with me!" "I will, but only if you agree to my terms!" "Speak your mind!" "You are not allowed to bully me, lie to me, and especially not show your displeased face at me. You must always regard me as the most beautiful person, and you must smile whenever I cross your mind..." "Fine!" Onlookers are floored at sight of this! Is this the myth of how there is a counter to all things? Sir Ares seems to be at his wit's end, this little fox of his own creation has outwitted him. Since he cannot discipline her, he will spoil her to the end of her own discredit instead!

Marriage

Sweet

Boss / CEO

President

Obsession



READ



Sir Ares, Goodnight!

Yan An

Chapter 1

“Let’s get a divorce.”

The man, dignified yet arrogant, gazed emotionlessly at the small woman in front of him.

“I’ll pay for the alimony,” he said indifferently. “If you need money, a job, or a good doctor for your mother, I’ll provide them for you.”

Rose fought desperately to hold back the tears in her eyes.

When Jay Ares's fiancée ran away the day before their wedding, they were forced to find a temporary substitute bride to feed the appetites of the ravenous paparazzi and media outlets.

He believed that she had accepted the role

He believed that she had accepted the role to claim the title, to be known as Mrs. Ares. However, the woman, Rose, alone knew that the reason she agreed was to fulfill her two lifetimes' worth of love for him.

He never knew how much she loved him.

"I didn't marry you for money," she whispered. The intensity of her love for him had given birth to an inferiority complex.

The man's deep, quiet eyes flashed a hint of skepticism.

If two complete strangers got married, what reason could it be if not for money?

"My patience runs thin. If there's nothing else, I'll arrange for my lawyer to meet you tomorrow with the divorce papers." The man took a final sip of coffee before placing the cup on the table and turning away to head upstairs.

Rose's eyes fell on the coffee cup, her timid face slowly becoming stubborn and grudging.

The wind lingers, the geese leave their marks!

Twice she had loved him with all her heart. She refused to give up on him that easily.

Half an hour later.

Upstairs.

"Husband!" Rose called out meekly, standing demurely at the door.

Jay, who was fixated on a document, was taken aback at the word "husband", and he instinctively looked up. He stared intently at Rose.

In their one year of marriage, he had forbidden her to address him as her husband. She had followed that rule obediently all this while. He was certainly not expecting an increase in boldness from her as their divorce drew near.

"Yes?"

"I'll agree to the divorce," Rose announced. "I don't want a house or any money. But I want a child." Although she

“I’ll agree to the divorce,” Rose announced. “I don’t want a house or any money. But I want a child.” Although she spoke softly, Jay could sense the resolution in her words.

His eyes widened slightly in surprise. ‘Huh, someone’s getting bolder,’ he thought.

“You and me? Never,” he spat, disgust in his voice.

Rose calculated the time that had passed and the dosage she had used when she spiked his coffee. ‘The drug should kick in before long, right?’

“After all, we are husband and wife,” she said. “If this whole thing is going to blow over, I feel I deserve to get something out of it!” Rose steeled her gaze and straightened her back. Her timid demeanor melted away to reveal a gritty resolve.

Jay raised his eyebrows slightly. ‘Well, well, well, the little fox’s tail is finally poking out of the sheep’s skin.’

"Rose, don't play hard-to-get with me. I assure you the alimony will more than satisfy you. If you're too greedy, you will end up with nothing—"

"Sir Ares, I've told you it's not about the money." Rose emphasized again. She looked more determined than ever, her eyes fixed on him. "But I'll have to borrow something from your body."

"What?" Jay frowned, getting a little impatient. At that moment, his body started to feel unnaturally hot.

"Rose, you dare drug me?" Jay instantly understood her intentions and his handsome face contorted into countless layers, like deep snow unmelting for millennia.

Rose looked calm and kept quiet. She neither confirmed nor denied it. Then, she pursed her thin lips lightly and slowly stripped off her clothes until her body was completely bare. Unhurriedly, she walked over to him and nestled by his body...

Jay clearly wanted to resist, but he could

Jay clearly wanted to resist, but he could not fight the urges of his body and he found himself forcefully embracing her in his arms.

The demons sealed in his body clamored to take him from the dark valley to the peak of the sky.

And they shared a spring night of intertwined atrophy.

...

Early in the morning, the first faint rays of dawn trickled through the translucent beige curtains and fell on the room's marble floor.

On the bed, the man opened his bleary eyes. His handsome, chiseled face exuded a dignified charm.

The passionate yet chilling rendezvous with Rose last night flooded his mind and Jay Ares sat up immediately.

He threw open the blanket and saw a few drops of blood staining the white bedsheets. They looked like blossomed lotus flowers, provocative and incredibly

bedsheets. They looked like blossomed lotus flowers, provocative and incredibly beautiful, blooming right in front of his eyes.

A cold fury spread across his face.

Damn. Had he been toyed with?

His slender and well-proportioned legs touched the floor. As he donned a bathrobe, he accidentally knocked something from the bedside table onto the floor.

Jay bent over to pick it up. It was a debit card and an elegantly handwritten note.

"The money in the debit card is the payment for last night. We're even now! Goodbye!"

The handsome man's already insidious-looking expression became even more threatening.

"Rose!" His furious voice, like a clear note of a cello, cut through the air and shook the entire building like a flame.

Did she think his body was for sale?

Did she think his body was for sale?

How dare she use his money to insult him!

Jay's slender jade-like fingers curled and clenched into a tight fist, to the point that his knuckles began to turn white.

"Rose, you better pray that you don't get my hands on you!"

...

In a secluded rental house in the East side of the city.

Rose laid on a simple fabric sofa, bit into the apple in her hand, and stared at the television screen.

The host was holding up a black-and-white photo of Rose and was announcing importantly:

"Lady Rose of the Ares Family ran away from home a few days ago. There are no surveillance tapes found that recorded her current location. There are also no records of her checking-in at any hotels in the city. If anyone has any information about her whereabouts, please give a call

about her whereabouts, please give a call to the program hotline. Informants will be rewarded with one million dollars."

Rose angrily tossed the apple core at the television.

"I'm not dead yet," she said indignantly. "What's that supposed to mean, Jay Ares? Why would you use a black and white memorial portrait for a missing person's advert?"

Then she burst out laughing. "If you want to catch me, try again in your next life!"

Rose exclaimed with confidence as she caressed her face which was very different from her memorial portrait.

All Jay knew about her was that she was Royan's daughter out of wedlock and that she grew up in a backwater mountain village. All the time, he had looked down on her and written her off as an ignorant, vulgar country girl.

However, what he did not know was that she had lived two lifetimes.

In her previous life, she had been known

In her previous life, she had been known as Angeline, a well-educated honor student and the eldest daughter of the Severe Family, one of the four aristocratic families in Swallow City. Not only was she a talented student in the Cyber Security Department of the First Academy, but she was also born with a silver spoon in her mouth and had the versatile skills befitting a lady from a wealthy family.

Her expertise in makeup was impeccable; she was able to disguise herself as just about anyone.

Before she left the Ares mansion, she donned a new disguise and carefully avoided all the surveillance cameras in the surrounding villas.

Why should she make it easy for Jay to find her?

Ten months later.

Rose gave birth to three adorable babies in the rented room.

She fell into a daze as she looked at her beautiful babies in their crib, two boys

Ten months later.

Rose gave birth to three adorable babies in the rented room.

She fell into a daze as she looked at her beautiful babies in their crib, two boys and one girl.

For the past ten months, the search for her had never stopped.

A man as proud as Jay Ares would never release the grudge of being toyed with for his entire life.

If she was caught by him, Rose knew that it would be the end for her. She doubted that his vengeance would be dated even if he tossed her into the ocean and fed her to sharks.

Now that she has children to look after, it was impossible to live a life of hiding.

Rose thought for a long time and made up her mind. She would endure the pain of parting with her love in order to live out the remainder of her life in peace.

Chapter 2

Jay Ares received an unexpected gift. A newborn baby.

As he looked at swaddled infant clamoring for food, a thick layer of frost seemed to cover Jay's handsome face.

"Where's the child's mother?" he asked through gritted teeth, his eyes flashing dangerously.

How dare that woman take his seed and shun the responsibility of taking care of the child?

"My apologies, sir," replied the courier. "The child's mother has died in the hospital, from dystocia."

Jay tensed up and fell silent. He took a long time processing it, the flame in his eyes mixed with a hint of doubt. "Dead?"

The person nodded grimly, took out his phone, and showed Jay the portrait of the deceased Rose.

"Mr. Ares, this is Rose's memorial portrait that we took of her. I can send it to you if you like—"

Jay's eyes scanned the phone screen rapidly. The woman in the photo was bloated and her swollen face was as pale as a ghost. Her protuberant eyes were opened wide, staring right across the screen.

Who could this be if not Rose?

When Jay, who had OCD, saw Rose's dead image, all sympathy and mercy inside him vanished.

"No! Tell me, where is she buried?"

"No. 674 in Mountain's Fork Cemetery."

Jay clutched the child and hurried back into the house.

In a nearby spot, Rose watched from the window of her brown car as Jay's tall figure retreated into the house. There was a sour look in her eyes.

Even the news of her death did not disrupt his calm expression

Even the news of her death did not disrupt his calm expression.

Perhaps she was only able to trick him so easily because he did not love her at all.

Her yearning for the man may have finally fizzled out, forever.

If two lifetimes' worth of passionate love was unable to penetrate his heart, why should she keep trying?

...

Five years later.

Outside the capital city's airport.

Rose pushed her suitcase in front of her. She was wearing a baseball cap, a pair of giant sunglasses, and a dark mask.

Her palm-sized face was mostly obscured, giving her a rather comical look.

Behind her were two beautiful kids.

The five-year-olds were rather taller than their same-age peers.

The boy wore a red jersey with embroidered wings on the shoulders, paired with black slacks and black Nike shoes. The scooter under his feet was moving harmoniously with his body.

The girl next to him fashioned a pair of pigtails. She wore a pink princess dress, and her face was as smooth and pale as an elf from a fantasy story.

The kids could be likened to princes and princesses from an anime.

As they walked, they garnered a fair amount of attention and compliments from people walking by.

"Wow, what beautiful children! Are they child stars?"

"What sort of genes must the parents have to give birth to such beautiful kids?"

Robert and Rozette seemed accustomed to such scenes; they even posed for photos when people requested them. The passersby loved their charming photoshoots as well as their cheerful behavior as they interacted with others.

behavior as they interacted with others.

"I'm Robert, the older brother."

"I'm Rozette, the younger sister."

When Rose heard the twins handing out introductions yet again, she could no longer keep her cool. As she walked further in front, she turned around to reprimand them.

"Robbie! Zetty! I've told you time and time again about human traffickers! Do you want to get abducted? Why would you give your names to strangers? Would it kill you if they don't know your names?"

The two children scrambled to catch up to their mother. The big brother looked at his mother's annoyed face and pouted. "Mommy, why do you wrap yourself up like that? Are you Belikov?"

Rose felt a little guilty. She had chosen her peculiar dress-code as she was worried about being recognized by Jay.

After all, she had hoodwinked him five years ago and even faked her death. If she were to suddenly appear alive in front of

years ago and even faked her death. If she were to suddenly appear alive in front of him, he would probably kill her with his own two hands.

Her mother was critically ill and wished to see her daughter and grandchildren one final time. If it were not for that, Rose would never have risked returning to the familiar city.

Rose said dismissively, "What do you know? This is called fashion. It's the latest trend."

When she realized her twins had taken off their sunglasses, Rose snapped at them sternly, "Put on your sunglasses."

The two kids sighed resignedly and put on their sunglasses.

The older brother, baby Robbie, looked like a tiny adult as he puffed up. "At least Mommy thinks it's cool."

Rose sighed with relief when she saw that their sunglasses were back on and covering their highly iconic eyes.

The mother and her kids wore the same

The mother and her kids wore the same type of sunglasses, they linked hands and walked side by side out of the airport.

As she walked, Rose gave her kids a lecture. "Our domestic security is not good enough. There are human traffickers everywhere, so you two had better not run around..."

Meanwhile, at the airport exit.

Jay was directly approaching Rose. Seeing the familiar tall, slender figure caught Rose off guard.

Rose's heart almost jumped out of her throat... She hastily added on, "Especially men who look like dogs in suits and ties. Who knows? Even if he's dressed well, he may be a beast underneath those clothes. Take a look at that man walking over there. Though he looks chic and elegant, he might be a cruel man. Most likely a human trafficker, at that. If you bump into men like him in the future, be sure to stay clear of them. Got it?"

As Rose frantically tried to find a way to avoid Jay, he suddenly looked straight at

As Rose frantically tried to find a way to avoid Jay, he suddenly looked straight at her and smiled warmly.

Rose was instantly rooted to the spot, her body petrified.

Her mind was awhirl. 'No, it can't be. Has Jay changed in my five years of absence? His frozen iceberg of a face is... smiling?

'For me?

'Perhaps after five years of separation, he finally realized what he was missing out on?'

"Jay!" A gentle female voice from behind her swiftly shattered Rose's naive fantasy.

Jay walked past Rose. His relaxed face momentarily betrayed a hint of annoyance—he had to take a curve to move around the trio blocking his way.

Rose sighed softly. Really, why would this guy smile at her?

He had always hated her.

"Mommy, that man looks like a good

"Mommy, that man looks like a good person. How could he be a human trafficker..." Her eyes were popping with excitement and fascination, making her look cuter than ever.

"What do you know? You can't judge a book by its cover," Rose murmured.

She quickly pulled her child away.

As she walked out of the airport, Rose could not help but take a last look behind her. She saw Jay smiling sincerely at the gorgeous woman.

Jay even took the initiative to take her luggage, a gentle and considerate side of him that Rose had never seen before.

"Scumbag!" Rose growled angrily to herself.

She could not understand what he saw in that big-chested bimbo. Those were the ones who were high maintenance and fragile as porcelain, shattering the moment they were touched.

Surely, they could not compare to the

As she walked out of the airport, Rose could not help but take a last look behind her. She saw Jay smiling sincerely at the gorgeous woman.

Jay even took the initiative to take her luggage, a gentle and considerate side of him that Rose had never seen before.

"Scumbag!" Rose growled angrily to herself.

She could not understand what he saw in that big-chested bimbo. Those were the ones who were high maintenance and fragile as porcelain, shattering the moment they were touched.

Surely, they could not compare to the multifaceted Rose, who was capable of all sorts of things. She was not afraid of getting her hands dirty, she was a good housewife who could work outside as well, she was able to bear his children and bring up their kids well. All in all, she was all anyone could ask for in a wife and daughter-in-law, really.

Chapter 3

As Rose began hailing a cab by the roadside, Jay walked over with the enchanting young woman by his side.

“Step aside.”

He spoke with his deep and mellow cello-like voice which could cause a woman's ovaries to explode.

Even so, it also contained a trace of superiority that the wealthy possessed.

Rose suddenly realized that she and her kids were indeed blocking their way—they were standing right in front of a Rolls-Royce with a Spirit of Ecstasy ornament on its bonnet.

Rose dragged her suitcase with one hand and her children with the other. Upon seeing Jay, she felt rather panicky, and was slow to move aside—

The voluptuous woman said in a sardonic voice, “You must be in some deep sh*t to have to wrap yourself up like that. Fine,

have to wrap yourself up like that. Fine, wear your sunglasses if you want, but why force your children to wear them while walking? Isn't that a health hazard, you're not worried they might trip or something?"

Rose felt sick to her stomach. 'I wouldn't be dressing like this if I didn't have to avoid plagues like you.'

The woman's words upset Zetty— Mommy was always right in her books.

Anyone who bad-mouthed Mommy would draw Zetty's ire as she would quickly change from a baby angel into a little devil.

At that moment, Zetty slammed herself into the woman.

The collision knocked her sunglasses off onto the ground.

The woman hastily stepped back, and Zetty's tiny body then bumped into Jay.

Zetty began assaulting Jay with her tiny fists, screeching in her adorable but malicious voice. "Mommy is just worried

fists, screeching in her adorable but malicious voice, "Mommy is just worried about us getting kidnapped by human traffickers like you. That's why she made us wear sunglasses to protect ourselves. I won't let baddies like you talk bad about Mommy, she is the best mommy in the world."

Jay turned his cold gaze onto Rose. "Did you tell her I'm a human trafficker?"

Faced with Jay's accusatory question, Rose's brain was instantly depleted of oxygen.

Of course, the answer was yes. By all means, she thought that he was more terrifying than any human trafficker.

If Jay found out that Zetty was his daughter, he would likely make a big scene right there and then, demanding for the child's custody.

Rose did not dare to speak up as she feared that Jay would recognize her voice.

Her silence did nothing but confirm his assumption.

Jay's expression turned dark. Did this woman just label him as a human trafficker?

“Is this how you teach your kids?” he spat.

Rose's head sank into her neck like a quail but she could not muster the power to confront Jay as her mind was completely disoriented.

Zetty resembled her mother, so Jay might not make the connection.

However, Robbie was practically a mini version of Jay. Robbie must not show his face to Jay at all costs.

Rose wrapped her arms around Robbie and clutched him tightly; she was worried that he would lose control like Zetty.

Jay shoved Zetty away and patted down the spot where Zetty had touched, looking disgusted. He then opened the rear seat door for the dame, and the two of them boarded the car and drove off without another word.

Robbie, still wrapped in Rose's arms, looked at the Rolls-Royce's license plate number and made a mental note of it.

That man looked exactly like him.

"Mommyyy, why didn't you say anything just now?" Zetty was so aggrieved that tears were filling up her eyes.

Every time she was bullied in the past, Mommy would run up to teach those bullies a lesson.

"Mommy, you're like a wimp today." Her baby Robbie took off his sunglasses and rolled his eyes at his mother who still had not said anything.

Rose was speechless. Did her two children just renounce her?

Jay was her nemesis in every sense of the word. As soon as he appeared, her kids stopped looking up to her.

It seemed that the pestilence was inevitable.

Disturbed, Rose hailed a cab and the trio headed off to Splendid Town district in

Disturbed, Rose hailed a cab and the trio headed off to Splendid Town district in City North's Third Ring Road, which was where her mother was currently staying.

...

Inside the luxurious Rolls-Royce.

Josephine Ares crossed her arms as she peered through the window to observe the curious sunglasses-wearing family until they boarded their cab and left.

She did not read much into the earlier confrontation.

However, when she saw the little girl, a familiar face flashed in her mind.

"Jay, don't you think that little girl looks familiar? Her eyes looked just like... just like my sister-in-law's!"

Her older brother Jay held the steering wheel as he replied airily, "Sister-in-law? What sister-in-law?"

"Jay, you were married once, remember?" Josephine reminded him.

"Jay, you were married once, remember?" Josephine reminded him.

The image of Rose flashed through Jay's head, and he mentally compared the little girl's face with Rose's.

Screech! The Rolls-Royce came to an abrupt stop.

Rose? That woman, the person who made him grind his teeth at the mere thought of her?

"Ouch!" Josephine jerked forward from the momentum and her forehead bumped the back of the car seat.

"Jay, how could you hurt your darling sister like that? What if I got hurt? Are you going to take care of me for the rest of your life?"

The Rolls-Royce stopped by the roadside. Jay rushed out of the car and glanced at the direction of the airport.

Josephine rolled down the window and said weakly, "Don't bother. I saw them getting into a cab just now. We're heading south and they're heading north. You won

getting into a cab just now. We're heading south and they're heading north. You won't be able to catch up to her even if you turned around."

Jay slowly returned to the driver's seat and closed the door.

Josephine chattered excitedly, "Jay, was the woman just now really Rose?"

Jay shifted the rearview mirror so that he was looking directly at Josephine. From the mirror, Josephine could clearly see the frigid look on her brother's face.

Josephine could not help but laugh. "Yup, only Rose can drive you this crazy. Oh yeah, she even called you a human trafficker."

Jay pondered about it and realized that it was indeed something that a person like Rose would do.

After all, the rational thinking of men and the emotional thinking of women were essentially two distinct things. Jay frowned and wondered how likely it was for Rose to appear on this side of town.

for Rose to appear on this side of town.

"It can't be her, she's been dead for five years." Although that was what he was told, he could find no explanation for the hint of anxiety that he felt.

"Jay, don't you feel that the way Rose died was very fishy?" said Josephine. "None of us saw a photo of her actually dead. A memorial portrait is not enough to prove that she died. Think about it. Photoshopping technology is improving every day."

"I've already sent people to search for her. If she's not dead, why couldn't anyone find her?" Jay stepped on the accelerator, revved the engine, and sped away.

Josephine raised her eyebrows and thought about it for a long time. "The Ares Family's tracking system is pretty impressive and all, but maybe she found a way to slip through the net."

Jay said coldly, "You're overestimating that b*stard of a countryside bum."

None of us saw a photo of her actually dead. A memorial portrait is not enough to prove that she died. Think about it. Photoshopping technology is improving every day.”

“I’ve already sent people to search for her. If she’s not dead, why couldn’t anyone find her?” Jay stepped on the accelerator, revved the engine, and sped away.

Josephine raised her eyebrows and thought about it for a long time. “The Ares Family’s tracking system is pretty impressive and all, but maybe she found a way to slip through the net.”

Jay said coldly, “You’re overestimating that b*stard of a countryside bum.”

Josephine shrugged. “Even though Rose came from the countryside, you gotta admit the way she managed to play you was pretty impressive.”

Jay was gripping the steering wheel so hard that his knuckles were turning pale.

Chapter 4

After half an hour.

The Rolls-Royce parked at the entrance of Mountain's Fork Cemetery.

Through the car window, Josephine read the three big words, Mountain's Fork Cemetery, and her delicate face turned pale.

The reason for her trip home was to visit her seriously ill grandmother. Unless Grandma had...

"Is Grandma here?" Josephine gasped.

"Rose is." Jay corrected her.

"Rose? Rose is buried here?"

Josephine breathed a sigh of relief. Then, she asked quizzically, "It's not the Qingming Festival, so why are we here?" (TN: Chinese families visit the tombs of their ancestors during Qingming Festival to clean the gravesites, pray to their ancestors, and make ritual offerings.)

Josephine suddenly squealed with excitement, "You still have feelings for Rose, I knew it! I mean, what else could explain that crazy genius baby Jenson?"

Jay was already taking long strides toward the high steps. Large cypress pine trees were planted on both sides of the stairs.

At Josephine's words, he came to a stop. He sighed dispiritedly, "Jenson was an accident. He was not a result of love!"

Josephine smacked her lips and said thoughtfully, "Why don't you have more accidents, then? Since your genes are so great, seems a waste to not utilize them more often."

"Not every child will have Jenson's good fortune of not inheriting his mother's inferior genes." When Jenson's name was brought up, a trace of warmth appeared on Jay's cold, handsome face.

His son, Jenson, not only physically resembled his father, but he also inherited his talented genes.

At the age of five, the kid was already a world-class hacker.

Although Josephine was fond of her nephew, she could never get used to Jay's arrogance and narcissistic attitude.

Therefore, she was more than happy to pull the rug from under his feet. "Yeah, he inherited all your good traits but he also caught your bad ones. Mother said he was even more haughty and untalkative than you were when you were a child. For a while, she was worried that he might have autism."

"How about you talk less?" Jay snapped. He never felt that his son had any problems.

Josephine sighed resignedly, "Have you never met kids before? They cry and they laugh. Like kids should."

For some reason, Jay suddenly thought about the little girl he bumped into at the airport exit.

"I met one just now. Even though the little girl was cute, there was nothing else

"I met one just now. Even though the little girl was cute, there was nothing else to her. If that's what you mean by being a kid, I'd rather Jenson not be one!"

With that, Jay turned his attention to the tombstones to search for the particular tomb.

After hearing Jay's declaration, Josephine decided to drop the argument.

"What is Rose's tombstone lot number?" Josephine asked instead.

"674," Jay stated.

"674? Go and die?" Josephine gasped exaggeratedly. "Rose was really unlucky, huh. How'd she even get such an unlucky number?" (TN: 674 sounds like go and die in Mandarin.)

Josephine had not realized it, but Jay's tall figure had come to a halt. It seemed like a dark cloud had overcast his handsome face.

The temperature of the air around him seemed to have plummeted.

'674?

'Go and die?

'That's what it meant?

'Is this a coincidence or was it on purpose?

'If it wasn't a coincidence, then that must mean that b*tch Rose faked her own death. Did she pull off this classic ruse of misdirection to sway me?'

When Jay found the tombstone with the lot number 674 and read the name that was carved, he was completely frozen.

Sure enough, he was played for a fool by Rose!

The elegant carving on the tombstone read, "Here lies Angeline Severe."

'Angeline? How could it be her?'

Josephine instinctively let out a yelp when she came over and read the name on the tombstone.

"Oh my gosh! Jay, it's Angeline!"

Jay stared at the tombstone. He could not wrap his head around how Rose's tombstone became Angeline's.

Angeline was a highly educated young lady hailing from a respectable family, while Rose was a b*stard bum from the countryside.

How could the two complete polar opposites end up sharing the same tombstone?

"Jay, if lot 674 is Angeline's tomb, then where's Rose buried?" Josephine asked bemusedly.

Jay sneered menacingly, "So, she's not dead yet, huh? Well, she will be soon."

He would personally make sure of it when he got his hands on her.

Jay stared around the cemetery for a while. His gaze looked nostalgic and somewhat reluctant.

After a long moment, he eventually got up and left.

When Jay returned to the car, he gave a

When Jay returned to the car, he gave a call to his assistant.

"Find a way to get patient Harper's family to transfer her to Grand Asia Hospital asap!"

Over the phone, his assistant, Grayson, was speechless.

Harper was the mother of the supposedly deceased Lady Rose.

He remembered clearly the day he learned of Lady Rose's mother. He had asked for instructions from the president. At that time, the president's original words were, "I'll pay for her treatment. But after that, I never want to hear about her ever again."

Why did the president change his mind so soon?

"Understood, sir," Grayson replied.

As Jay hung up the phone, a thin leer spread across his lips.

Josephine turned away when she saw Jay's ominous expression. She knew what it

Josephine turned away when she saw Jay's ominous expression. She knew what it meant—Rose was in big trouble.

...

Rose got off in Splendid Town.

That very evening, Rose received a phone call from the hospital concerning her mother.

The person on the line told her that due to the sudden deterioration of her mother's condition, she should transfer her mother to Grand Asia Hospital's nephrology specialist as soon as possible.

Grand Asia Hospital, Jay's company.

Rose's mind instantly went blank.

She had vowed to never step foot into Jay's territory again. Alas, you never know what life would throw at you!

Perhaps Jay would not remember her?

Rose convinced herself optimistically, and she gathered up all her courage and decided to go to Grand Asia Hospital.

and she gathered up all her courage and decided to go to Grand Asia Hospital.

The next day.

As an extra precaution, Rose dumped her usual ladylike look and adorned a more punk-like style.

She teased her hair into dreadlocks and painted her face with trendy makeup—black eyeshadows and overlined crimson red lipstick. On top of that, she wore her comical round-framed sunglasses before grabbing a taxi to Grand Asia Hospital.

When Rose delivered her mother's file to the registered doctor on duty, the doctor avoided Rose's gaze and slowly moved his mouse...

A notification instantly popped up on Jay's cell phone and he snatched it up eagerly.

After reading the message on the phone's screen, his attractive and mesmerizing lips arched into an evil grin.

"Rose, you can run but you can't hide!"

Chapter 5

Grand Asia Hospital.

Jay went to the monitoring room. As soon as he entered, a young man greeted him and gave his report.

"Master Ares, the patient's data entered our system twenty minutes ago. We've done as you ordered and set up an electronic tracker to track the person who submitted her information. But, this woman looks very different from the photo you gave us..."

Jay's eyes were glued intently on the monitor. The young man shifted the mouse and a woman dressed in punk fashion appeared on the screen.

Jay frowned and carefully observed the woman with dreadlocks, lips smeared with lipstick with a cat-eye eyeshadow, trying to suppress the discomfort he was feeling.

"Zoom in!" Jay barked.

feeling.

"Zoom in!" Jay barked.

Rose's face was enlarged on the monitor and the high-definition image offered a clear view of her face.

She still looked the same...

Jay narrowed his eyes.

How did Rose escape from his escape-proof net back then?

He could not fathom how she had managed to stay hidden when the entire world was searching for her, but her final move of faking her death was admittedly very clever.

When Jay thought about how he had been outwitted by a commoner like Rose, he felt a massive blow to his self-esteem.

"Grayson, seize her and tie her up." Jay's thin lips sneered maliciously.

"Yes, Master," Grayson replied before leaving the room.

...

Rose sat on the bench in the hallway, anxiously waiting for the doctor's analysis.

She was completely flummoxed by the doctor's many inexplicable excuses for her mother's admission.

First, there were problems with her mother's indicators. Then, there were suddenly too many patients in Grand Asia and no spare beds, so she had to wait outside.

In order to get timely and effective treatment for her mother, Rose could do nothing else but wait patiently for the results.

Suddenly, several men wearing tinted glasses and black uniforms approached her.

Rose immediately felt that something was wrong and was about to walk away when more similarly dressed men appeared on the other end of the corridor.

"Miss, would you please come with us?" Grayson removed his sunglasses and

Grayson removed his sunglasses and offered a polite smile.

Rose finally realized that she had walked straight into a trap by willingly going to Grand Asia.

"Who are you? And why should I go with you?" Rose spoke with forced calm.

Grayson replied rather firmly, "Miss, don't make us use force. Our men tend to be a bit rough, one small mishap and we might break one of your limbs by accident."

That was nothing short of a blatant threat.

Rose was well aware that Jay's bodyguards were as ruthless as their master.

As such, she chose to give up rather than resist and she followed Grayson down the corridor.

When they arrived outside the lounge, Rose was reluctant to go in. Grayson threw the door open and shoved her into the room. Rose stumbled a few steps

threw the door open and shoved her into the room. Rose stumbled a few steps forward before stopping right in front of Jay Ares.

Jay was sitting on a black rocking chair that seamlessly blended into his black suit. The scene simply emanated nauseating vanity and arrogance.

When Rose came in, Jay's eyes instantly locked onto her face.

"Wash your face clean with that sink over there," Jay ordered her sharply.

Jay's intolerable pompousness sparked the dormant fury within Rose.

"Mister, it's natural for a woman to want to look her best, you know. You're being unreasonable and impolite." She chose to act dumb.

Jay leaned forward and said severely, "My apologies, perhaps I just can't see you as good-looking."

"Eh—

"There's beauty in all types of flowers. It'

"There's beauty in all types of flowers. It's the same for people. I can't help it if you're close-minded." Rose said, holding her ground.

"Fine. If you won't wash your face, I'll get my people to do it for you." Jay's voice was smooth and silky, but it sent shivers down Rose's spine.

"That won't be necessary!" Rose stood up abruptly. "I'll do it myself."

She walked toward the sink, unscrewed the tap, and splashed cold water over her face. She rubbed her face and returned to Jay.

"I'm done."

Jay inspected the unchanged painted face and frowned. He instinctively reached out to touch the multicolored makeup on her face. "Is this waterproof makeup?"

Even after touching the garish makeup, his fingers were unstained.

"I'll give you three minutes. Right now. Clean up your face. Otherwise, I'll have

one of my men peel the skin off your face

Clean up your face. Otherwise, I'll have one of my men peel the skin off your face. " His voice was so icy that Rose thought she was inside a coffin of ice.

Rose remained adamantly seated on the sofa opposite him. "I can't wash it off," she said stubbornly.

"Come in!"

At his command, the door opened from the outside and a group of burly men entered the room and formed two rows around Rose.

Rose was dumbfounded. She stammered, "No... I mean... It's just makeup removal... Is this really necessary?"

Jay gave the men a meaningful look, and then a few tall men aggressively grabbed Rose. One of them tightened a hand around Rose's neck, and she quickly had trouble breathing.

Another man took a bottle of makeup remover and sprayed it recklessly on Rose's face. Some of it seeped into her eyes and instantly burned her.

Then, another person took out a toothbrush and roughly scrubbed Rose's face.

Finally, the last person took a bottle of mineral water and poured it over Rose's face.

"We're all civilized people. Why are we acting like primitive monkeys?" Rose yelled angrily.

With the rude and forceful assistance of the men, Rose's true face slowly appeared.

As Rose's face started to look more familiar, Jay's expression became uglier and uglier.

"Rose Loyle!"

With their duty complete, the men finally released Rose and promptly left the room in an orderly manner.

At that moment, Rose looked like a drowned rat with her soaked face and dripping wet clothes. To say the least, she was embarrassed as hell.

“Rose Loyle!”

With their duty complete, the men finally released Rose and promptly left the room in an orderly manner.

At that moment, Rose looked like a drowned rat with her soaked face and dripping wet clothes. To say the least, she was embarrassed as hell.

“So what if I’m Rose? Bite me!” Rose angrily waved her fists at Jay and looked utterly furious.

If Jay felt no compassion for Rose five years ago, he most definitely did not have any to spare for her now.

Rose’s evident irritation only made his evil smile grow larger.

That woman used to be a docile and well-behaved puppet, bland and tasteless.

Who would have thought that she turned out to be a scheming pot of black squid ink!



Sir Ares, Goodnight!

Yan An

Language: English



557.5K words | Ongoing

289.0K

Views

9.2






 Rating >

Even after two lifetimes, Rose still could not melt the ice-cold heart of Jay Ares. Heartbroken, she decides to live under the guise of an idiot, tricking him and running away with their two children. This infuriates Sir Ares to no end, and everyone around them is certain that this will prove to be Rose's ultimate demise. However, upon the next day, the great Sir Ares is seen getting down on one knee in the middle of the street, coaxing the little brat, "Please be good and come home with me!" "I will, but only if you agree to my terms!" "Speak your mind!" "You are not allowed to bully me, lie to me, and especially not show your displeased face at me. You must always regard me as the most beautiful person, and you must smile whenever I cross your mind..." "Fine!" Onlookers are floored at sight of this! Is this the myth of how there is a counter to all things? Sir Ares seems to be at his wit's end, this little fox of his own creation has outwitted him. Since he cannot discipline her, he will spoil her to the end of her own discredit instead!

Marriage

Sweet

Boss / CEO

President

Obsession



READ



Chapter 6

“Bite you? I wouldn’t put my mouth anywhere near something as dirty as you.” Jay raised his eyebrows coolly.

He rose from the black leather swivel chair and approached Rose step by step. He peered down arrogantly at Rose from his towering 185cm height.

"So, Rose. How should you pay me back for what you did five years ago?" Jay asked sinisterly.

Rose's memory of that night was crystal clear. Five years ago, with a little extra courage from alcohol, she had...

She drugged that man, and then...

“I-I’ve already compensated you!” Rose frantically tried to reason with the tycoon.

A flicker of annoyance appeared on Jay’s darkening face.

"How about I pay you back tenfold and have you sleep with a man, hm?" Jay reached out and grasped her tiny chin.

have you sleep with a man, hm?" Jay reached out and grasped her tiny chin. His anger was like a drowsy lion, ready to pounce at any moment.

Rose saw the flash of scarlet in his eyes. He looked like a predator and she was immobilized by fear.

"What do you want?"

Jay's hand slipped down to her neckline and he tugged forcefully on her linen-cotton blend dress. The tearing of fabric was heard.

"Rose, remember how you humiliated me last time? Well, today I'm going to double what you did to me." His evil voice whispered in her ear, "Tell me, what's your type of man? I'll make sure to satisfy you. If one isn't enough, I can get two."

Rose felt every fiber of her body being frozen solid by Jay's cold fury, every word he said was accentuated by the glee of revenge and felt like slashes of a knife on her skin.

"I want you to taste what it's like to have

"I want you to taste what it's like to have sex with someone you hate! Rose, how dare you make a fool out of me! I'll show you what the consequences are for toying me!"

Rose was hurled onto the sofa, and then Jay's big and tall body pressed against her. He grabbed her by the chin and forced her to look at him.

He picked up a fruit knife next to him and held it menacingly close to her face.

"I never want to see your face ever again. Because it makes me sick. I'm going to destroy your face, dump you into a brothel and you will never see the light of day again."

A wicked leer spread across his face. "I want you to taste the despair I felt."

The blade penetrated her skin little by little and Rose felt a sharp pain on her face.

She stared at Jay with a forlorn look but then she smiled sadly. "You hate me this much?" she whispered.

Jay's look of disgust was more than sufficient to answer the question.

Rose closed her eyes in surrender.

Whatever! If this was to be her destiny, then so be it.

As Rose awaited her inevitable demise, a phone suddenly rang.

The ringtone was the song Red Spider Lily, sung by Angeline Severe. Her voice was ethereal and beautiful.

Both Rose and Jay subconsciously pulled out their phones at the same time. Jay shot her a derisive look. "It's my phone. Why are you looking for yours?"

Rose was stunned. 'Why did Jay set Angeline's Red Spider Lily as his ringtone?'

In her previous life, the only time she sang Red Spider Lily was at her university's graduation party and it was only recorded on the university's platform. Did he download the song from there?

Jay whipped out his phone but the screen

Jay whipped out his phone but the screen display was not turned on.

Jay gaped at Rose with incredulity.

"What, did you steal my cell phone ringtone as well?" Jay hissed, his handsome face radiating fury.

Rose was momentarily speechless

This song was, after all, clearly hers. If anyone stole the song, it was Jay.

The phone rang insistently and Jay snapped impatiently, "Answer the phone!"

Rose pulled out her phone with trembling hands and saw that "Little Lover" was trying to reach her. At that moment, Rose was so nervous that the phone slipped from her hands onto the ground.

She panicked and bent over to pick up the phone but Jay grabbed it with one long arm before she could.

"Little Lover?"

When Jay read the caller ID, Jay smiled

When Jay read the caller ID, Jay smiled mockingly.

Rose was so anxious that her entire body was as stiff as a taut bowstring.

She feared that Jay would answer the phone and discover the existence of his other son, Robbie.

As expected, Jay answered the call without hesitation.

Rose acted quickly. She shot up like a cannon and crashed into Jay. She snatched the phone and hurriedly yelled at Robbie on the other side of the line, "Help me!" Then, she hung up the phone as fast as she could.

Jay pushed her away, patted down his wrinkled clothes, and plopped himself down onto the sofa in a condescending manner.

"Begging for help?" His tone was light but heavy with sarcasm. "I'm looking forward to seeing this little lover of yours. Maybe he'll rescue you from me with his three heads and six arms!"

Rose batted her long eyelashes sorrowfully. She wondered if her baby Robbie would be breaking down right now after hearing her cry for help.

Would he choose to call the police?

If he knew his mommy was in danger, would he be able to look after Zetty?

After all, that was the consensus between the two of them!

"Rose, I'll give you a day for your lover to rescue you," Jay said suddenly. "If you guys can escape five of my biggest men, I'll let the matter slide. Otherwise..." Jay's eyes were lit with flames of purgatory.

Rose shuddered and her voice trembled from fear. "Otherwise, what?"

"Both of you can go to hell together," Jay growled savagely.

Jay picked up the fruit knife on the floor, and its reflective surface threw a ray of cold light on Rose's face. There was already a red line of clotted blood on her face. Jay stepped purposefully toward her, knife in hand

face. Jay stepped purposefully toward her, knife in hand.

Rose covered her face and cried out desperately.

"Jay, if you kill me, our son will hate you forever!"

The fruit knife that Jay was wielding fell to the ground with a heavy clatter.

Suddenly, Jenson's voice was echoing repeatedly in his head: "I want mommy! I want mommy!"

Jenson had never been a talkative kid in his early years, but three out of five times he opened his mouth, it was to say those very words. He even cried out those words in his sleep sometimes.

When the memories flooded Jay's head, he irritably tossed the knife aside but the anger welling up within him had not subsided.

"How are you qualified to be his mother?" he hissed. "What have you done for him in the past five years?"



Rose started tearing up. Jay's dire

mother?" he hissed. "What have you done for him in the past five years?"

Rose started tearing up, Jay's dire accusation tore her heart. "No mother in this world would ever abandon her child," she sobbed. "If there wasn't a compelling reason, I would've come back to see him ages ago!"

That did not improve his temper. "You're just a greedy and cowardly wimp," he snarled.

Rose could have argued the point. She had made the woeful decision to abandon her first child to give the other two babies a shot at a bright future. Furthermore, she knew that her first baby would also be brought up well if he was taken in by the Ares Family.

However, those were grievances that she could never tell anyone.

"Yes, I am a wimp," Rose howled, shelving her pride and enduring humiliation for the sake of survival.



Chapter 7

Jay picked Rose up and threw her roughly under the desk. He pulled off his azure tie and bound her hands with it to the leg of the table.

He then snatched up a rag from the table and stuffed it into Rose's mouth.

All Rose could do was continuously lash out at Jay with her two free legs.

Unfortunately, her struggles were futile in the face of the vast difference between their strengths.

With his prey immobilized in his net, Jay grinned. "Rose, you can be honest with me." He ruthlessly aimed a kick at Rose's short flailing legs.

Temporarily satisfied, he then casually whipped out his cell phone and called his baby boy.

Rose was left with her hair in a mess, her clothes torn, and her initially snow-white legs covered with bruises.

She stared at Jay indignantly and gave out muffled whines from her gagged mouth. She was, however, not crying or anything of the sort.

Her inaudible screams were, in fact, a string of obscenities aimed at Jay, cursing that he would get hit by a car if he was on the road, that he would be swallowed by a tsunami if he went to sea, and that he would run into a tornado if he boarded a plane.

Suddenly, a tiny and composed child's voice resonated from Jay's cell phone.

"Daddy!"

Rose instantly fell silent.

Her bloodshot eyes were locked onto Jay's cell phone.

Jay spared Rose a contemptuous look. His shirt was hanging loose after he removed his tie, baring his sexy neck.

Rose was actually staring at the phone but from Jay's point of view, it looked like Rose was staring at his neckline.

Jay recalled the night five years ago.

His face soured and he glared at her coldly.

"If it's nothing important, don't disturb me. I'm busy." Jenson said coolly after Jay's prolonged silence.

Just as Jenson was about to hang up, Jay, who knew his son very well, said casually, "Make your own lunch today."

"No way!"

With those final words, the phone gave a beep and went silent.

Jay's handsome face turned darker than Bao Gong's.

In the entire world, only Jenson would dare to hang up on a call from Jay Ares. Honestly, Jay did not quite know how to handle the kid either.

Jay gave a nearly inaudible sigh as the clock on the wall chimed at the new hour.

No one would have ever dreamed that the noble and prideful Jay Ares had been

forced to return home prematurely to seek

forced to return home punctually to cook for his son. In fact, it had been going on for the entirety of five years.

Jenson had many quirks and did not allow any women to enter their villa. He was also known for inheriting his father's obsessive compulsiveness.

Even more peculiarly, Jenson never ate any meals prepared by anyone other than his father.

His reason was simple. Other people's food was tasteless.

If anyone asked him what he felt a dish was lacking, he would roll his eyes and say, "The taste of my father's love."

Every day, Jay had to rush home one hour before noon. In case of the occasional business trip, he would prepare his son's meals and store them in the refrigerator in advance.

He used to think that teaching Jenson how to cook would solve the problem. Jenson was a natural prodigy with an impressive IQ, but he seemed to have an

impressive IQ, but he seemed to have an incurable inaptitude for cooking.

Jay had personally tutored his son countless times but the dishes Jenson made always ended up inedible.

They were so bad that even Jenson himself refused to eat them.

Finally, after several quarrels between the father and son, Jenson grudgingly compromised and agreed to also accept the meals cooked by his grandparents.

Having to look after such an arrogant and abnormal son, Jay felt rather miserable, to say the least.

He peered at the woman tied to the table and the anger in him started to bubble again.

If it were not for this accursed woman, his life would have been spared of many hardships.

Jay knew he was no saint—minor annoyances in his life were to be expected and dealt with.

"Rose." He took a few steps and squatted down beside her.

Rose recognized the unmistakable malevolence in his eyes and her whole body shuddered.

Jay removed the gag from her mouth and said maliciously, "You're in luck. I'm going to leave for a while, so you better pray that your Little Lover will hurry up and save you sorry a*s. If you're still here when I return, you can look forward to a horrendous death!"

"You fuc—" Rose began to yell but was cut short as Jay shoved the rag back into her mouth.

He got up, grabbed his car keys from the pearwood table, and left.

Rose heard Jay instructing his bodyguards outside the door. "You all can leave your post now. No one can unlock the fingerprint lock, anyway. You can go downstairs."

"Yes, Mr. Ares."

Fingerprint lock?

Rose paused for a moment and her mind raised a question.

‘Are the fingerprints of identical twins the same? If their genes are carbon copies, could their fingerprints be as well?’

At the entrance of Grand Asia Hospital.

A small figure clutching a scooter hopped off a DiDi car and ran into the hospital.

When the little boy entered the hospital’s outpatient hall, he glanced at his blue smartwatch. With a few button clicks, the boy switched on the location tracking system.

When he saw that the marked location was not far away, the little boy took a deep gulp with relief.

However, he accidentally licked the oversized non-woven mask on his face and his eyes immediately crinkled in disgust.

He felt a little nervous when he entered the hospital.

He followed the route on his smartwatch and walked through the outpatient corridors and eventually found himself at the majestic marble entrance of an immensely tall building.

The kid felt that he had stumbled upon the most luxurious hospital he had ever seen in his life. The owner of the hospital must be a rich person. Anyone who could afford treatment in this hospital must surely be wealthy as well.

‘Who kidnapped Mommy?’

‘Is it a rich kidnapper?’

‘Who could it be?’

When the little guy passed through the revolving door, he rode his scooter and rushed toward the elevator.

Next to the elevator was a gold-painted map and floor guide.

According to it, the first floor up to the fifth floor contained patient wards. The sixth to the eighth floor housed various logistics service rooms, and the ninth

afford treatment in this hospital must surely be wealthy as well.

‘Who kidnapped Mommy?’

‘Is it a rich kidnapper?’

‘Who could it be?’

When the little guy passed through the revolving door, he rode his scooter and rushed toward the elevator.

Next to the elevator was a gold-painted map and floor guide.

According to it, the first floor up to the fifth floor contained patient wards. The sixth to the eighth floor housed various logistics service rooms, and the ninth floor was the supreme VIP lounge. A few floors above the ninth was another stretch of logistic departments, and the floors further up were more patient wards for various departments.

"This place is huge! How am I supposed to find my way around?" The little guy groaned as he scanned the detailed map.

Chapter 8

The receptionist nurse at the desk noticed the little boy. He had a head of charming black hair and was dressed in a white T-shirt with an armor print on his chest, a pair of black track pants, and a black mask.

The monochrome look of his getup made him look stylish, like something out of an artistic painting. The nurse fancied that he looked just like a little prince from a comic book.

‘He’s so freaking cute!’

"Who are you looking for, little one?" The nurse walked over and greeted him with a warm smile, her voice gentle.

"I'm looking for my—my daddy!" the little boy instinctively.

‘Mommy said I should always be careful when I'm outside.’

‘Don't tell any strangers the truth, except for police officers, of course.’

The little guy looked up innocently at the nurse, "Miss, do you know where my father is?"

When the petite nurse observed the boy's face, with his big round eyes peeking from under his mask, she was awestruck with a sudden realization. 'Those eyes are exactly the same as the cold Mr. Ares's!'

However, Mr. Ares always had that trademark serious look on his face. Even with the charming good looks he was gifted with, most people would not dare to approach him.

The little guy standing before her was the complete opposite. He looked soft and cuddly and his warm smile could melt snow. Frankly, he was rather irresistible.

"Oh, yes. Mr. Ares's office is on the ninth floor!" the nurse answered quickly without hesitation.

The little boy was a little displeased. Did he really look like this Mr. Ares's son? Or did he just have a common face?

The nurse's attitude took a 180-degree turn. She leaned over and asked courteously, "Shall I take you to his office?"

The boy quickly shook his head. "No."

'This nurse looks pretty but she doesn't seem very bright. If she follows me around, she might ruin my plan,' he thought.

At that moment, the elevator door opened and the boy swiftly hopped onto the elevator.

As he went up the floors, the tracker on his smartwatch told him that he was getting closer.

When he arrived on the ninth floor, his current location and the destination marker overlapped.

The little boy exited the elevator and followed the prompts of the positioning system and soon located the room Rose was surely locked in.

On the big wooden door hung a wooden

On the big wooden door hung a wooden sign that read "President's Lounge".

The small boy pushed the door but it did not budge.

He noticed the copper fingerprint lock on the door and, with no better plan, tried to unlock it by placing his little finger on the scanner. To his surprise, he heard the fingerprint lock click and the door swung open.

The little guy was dumbfounded. 'Is this fingerprint lock specially designed for me?' he wondered.

The boy pushed the door open and saw the humiliated figure of his mother tied to a table leg. Her hair was disheveled and her face was buried in her knees. Her shoulders were shaking.

'Is Mommy crying?' he thought, alarmed.

He had never seen his mother cry before.

'Someone must have done bad things to her to make her cry.'

"Mommy!" yelled the small boy.

"Mommy!" yelled the small boy, dropping his scooter and dashing toward the tied up Rose.

When Rose heard her son's familiar cute voice, she lifted her teary face, and there he was. Her baby Robbie, standing right in front of her. To say that Rose was stunned was an understatement.

Her gaze wandered to the fingerprint lock and she realized that her hunch was true.

Her baby Robbie really did have the same fingerprint as Jenson!

Baby Robbie tore off his mask and his small, handsome face scrunched up with anger.

"Mommy, who's the jerk who bullied you? I'll kill him." As he said that, he performed an elaborate and nimble roundhouse kick in the air.

Baby Robbie was fairly talented at Taekwondo.

Initially, Rose had signed him up for Taekwondo classes to strengthen his rather frail and weak body.

Taekwondo classes to strengthen his rather frail and weak body.

To her surprise, the coach was soon raving about the boy's natural talent. Two years later, Baby Robbie's bookshelves were crammed with his many taekwondo trophies.

In the past six months, he had even started to challenge the older groups and performed very well.

Rose helped him put his mask back on his face. "It's dangerous here," she said hushedly, "let's leave quickly, we'll continue later."

"Okay!" Baby Robbie responded obediently.

Before she left, Rose had a sudden thought. "Wait," she said, "we have to find a way to delete the surveillance camera footage. We can't let the bad guys find out about you."

"That's easy. Leave that to me."

Very soon, the entire building's surveillance camera footage was erased

Very soon, the entire building's surveillance camera footage was erased.

...

The villas in City South seemed to blend into the horizon. The area was renowned as the most valuable real estate paradise in the entire city.

The bungalow villas were huge in themselves but their gardens were even bigger.

The microdistrict had a record-low percentage of the city's population—less than 0.5 percent of the citizens lived there. Of course, only the richest and the most powerful people could afford to live in that paradise that seemed to blend into the heavens.

Jay drove his Lincoln into the underground garage. Swiftly and elegantly, he drifted into the parking spot, planting the car perfectly.

Jay quickly got out of the car and hurried into the house.

He unlocked the security door and a delicious aroma wafted into his nostrils. Jay was slightly taken aback and peered around the room.

"Jay? When did you get back?" Josephine was holding a platter of sweet and sour pork ribs and greeted Jay as he entered.

Jay's mother was setting up the table.

Jay's father was in the recreation area in the living room with his grandson, building a tall Lego robot together.

Or perhaps more accurately, the old grandpa was merely sitting next to Jenson, looking at his grandchild proudly.

On the other hand, Jenson completely ignored his grandpa's presence.

Jay changed into his indoor slippers and walked toward Jenson. He said casually, "If Grandpa and Grandma are here, why did you need daddy to come back? Daddy was very busy at noon today—"

'Busy, my foot!' Jenson thought scornfully.

Jenson turned a deaf ear to his father's words. He continued happily building the Lego robot which was already taller than him.

"Say something!" snapped Jay.

"You chose to come back by yourself," Jenson said coolly.

What he meant was, since his daddy had his own free will and full control of his own legs, him coming home was on him and not Jenson, really. Why should he be so displeased if he chose it himself?

Jay was speechless for a moment but kept his calm as he tried to reason with his son. "Daddy only rushed home because I thought you didn't have any food for lunch. If you told Daddy that Grandpa and Grandma were home on the phone, Daddy wouldn't have needed to rush home."

"The doctors said I have autism. Why are you expecting me to say that much? Idiot!" Jenson forcefully slammed the last piece of Lego into the robot's eyes and

you expecting me to say that much? Idiot!" Jenson forcefully slammed the last piece of Lego into the robot's eyes and stood up. He shoved Jay away and went upstairs alone.

"Why are you talking so much now?" Jay called out.

"I guess I've outdone myself!" Jenson snapped.

Jay's face darkened from Jenson's retort.

Grandpa laughed and said sarcastically, "Like father like son."

Jay was so angry that he almost smashed Jenson's robot. Grandpa hastily stopped him. "Don't do it. This is Jenson's mommy. If you touch his mommy, your son said that he'll do the same to yours."

It had always been this way. The whole family would suffer when Jenson threw a fit over Jay's actions.

And it always ended up with his grandma shedding tears for her dear grandson.

Chapter 9

It was only then that Jay realized that the robot was the image of a beautiful young woman.

‘Is this little guy missing his mommy again?’ he thought, exasperated.

"Jenson, do you really want to see your mummy—" Jay blurted out without thinking.

Jenson stood morosely on the stairs, his tiny body looking particularly lonely and stubborn. He turned to look directly at Jay and nodded solemnly.

Jay pursed his lips. He supposed he should count himself lucky that he had not thrown Rose into a brothel yet.

Otherwise, Jenson’s selfish nature would never forgive him if he found out that his father had been bullying his mommy.

However—

Jenson only missed his mommy so much as a result of a poor decision made by Jay.

A few years ago, Jay believed that Rose was dead but did not want Jenson to live in a world full of spite. So he cooked up a lie that his mommy still loved him every day.

Of course, as he recently found out to his utmost shock, Rose was very much alive.

As Jay was contemplating whether to take Jenson to Rose, his cell phone rang.

On the other side of the call was his assistant, Grayson, who sounded terribly anxious.

"Mr. Ares... Rose got away."

"What?" Jay's handsome face crumpled into an incredulous look.

"I'll be there right away." Without even taking the time to eat lunch, Jay hung up and turned to leave the house.

Grandma and Grandpa looked at their son who was rushing back and forth like a busy bee. Somehow, they felt a little sorry for him.

Both grandparents turned their eyes to Jenson, the cause of their son's hectic scrambling. "Little Jenson, look how tired you made your daddy. How about you let Grandpa and Grandma make lunch for you in the future?"

"No, it's not good." Jenson entered his room and slammed the door shut.

Grandma held a spatula in her hand and waved it defiantly at Jenson. "Jenson, you little rascal! Who taught you to behave this way? It's not cute at all."

Josephine sighed weakly, "His daddy."

...

Jay rushed to the hospital as quickly as possible.

When he got to the VIP section on the ninth floor, the fingerprint lock was intact on the door but the door was wide open. Jay's steely face was lined with shock.

That fingerprint lock was unique, different from all of the other models in

That fingerprint lock was unique, different from all of the other models in the market.

It was not equipped with a password system and gave no leeways for potential break-ins.

The only way to unlock it was to get a fingerprint match on the first try.

Only his and Jenson's fingerprints were registered for the lock.

"Did you find anything from the surveillance camera?" Jay instantly thought of the other security measures of the building.

Grayson looked down and said, "Mr. Ares, the back-end storage of the surveillance system was intentionally destroyed."

Jay's pupils contracted.

Grand Asia's surveillance system was extremely well hidden and the back-end storage system had many layers of security.

How did Rose's unknown helper decipher his surveillance system in such a short time?

Was that person a professional?

"Who was on duty at the front desk?"

Without the surveillance system, the only thing Jay could think of was an eyewitness.

Soon, the petite nurse at the receptionist desk was brought to Jay.

Jay sat on the swivel chair and furrowed his well-formed eyebrows.

From the side, Grayson cleared his throat and asked in a voice of authority, "You are required to have a very good memory to work in Grand Asia. Now, I'll give you a little test. Since 11 am, who has been to the hospital?"

That was the first time the nurse was asked to see the president in person, she was a little nervous and stuttered.

"Mr. Ares, everyone who came at noon today were family members of the

today were family members of the inpatients, they were... Ward 808... Ward 704... Ward 706... Ward 503..."

The nurse tried her best to scour her head for the details of every visitor. However, Jay interrupted her impatiently. "Skip through the patients' family members that you've seen before. Were there any new faces?"

The nurse scrunched her forehead and thought hard, but finally shook her head. "I've met everyone before."

Grayson was puzzled. He asked, "How is that possible? Unless it was Batman who crawled in through the window?"

Jay frowned as well.

After some time, the nurse remembered something and suddenly exclaimed, "Oh yeah..."

Everyone turned to focus on her. The nurse smiled embarrassedly, "Nah, it can't be him."

"Who?" Jay frowned.

The nurse hesitated for a long time before she said, "Master Jenson!"

Grayson's jaws dropped. "You mean Master Jenson went to the VIP floor?"

The small nurse nodded.

"When?" Jay asked.

"Around 11:10 am," she said confidently.

After a moment of shock, Jay slowly regained his senses.

Although Jenson only had a tiny time frame to do what the nurse claimed, it was the only explanation for the fingerprint lock breach.

Jay's temper was rising, he felt a sense of betrayal.

Grayson saw what was happening and hurriedly shooed the others out of the office.

Mr. Ares was betrayed by an alliance of his wife and son. One can only imagine how bad foul his mood must be.

Wham!

Jay thumped his fist on the desk and hissed scornfully, "Rose, I guess I've underestimated you. I can't believe you managed to turn my son on me the moment you stepped foot into the country. Seems like you've bought Jenson over."

Grayson gingerly handed a cup of coffee to the president. He said with a trembling voice, "Mr. Ares, since Master Jenson and Rose are already in contact, why don't you just allow them to meet?"

Jay raised his eyebrows and looked up at Grayson as he spoke, tapping his fingers gently on the table.

"Go on."

Relieved, Grayson went on, "Mr. Ares, according to past experiences, any woman who tried to get close to Master Jenson always ended up with a life of misery. After all, you should know better than anyone about Master Jenson's ability to make someone's life a living hell.

Grayson as he spoke, tapping his fingers gently on the table.

"Go on."

Relieved, Grayson went on, "Mr. Ares, according to past experiences, any woman who tried to get close to Master Jenson always ended up with a life of misery. After all, you should know better than anyone about Master Jenson's ability to make someone's life a living hell.

"After all, Miss Rose is just a b*stard girl from the countryside. If you assign Miss Rose into the house as a babysitter, with Master Jenson's OCD and autism, I'm sure it won't take long for Master Jenson's dreamy image of his perfect mommy to be completely shattered.

"On the other hand, Miss Rose will likely be pestered to death by Master Jenson! Who knows, perhaps you won't even need to dismiss her before she begs you to let her pack up and leave!"

Chapter 10

After giving his long and incisive anecdote analysis, Grayson looked at Mr. Ares with a proud and expectant look.

Just as he thought Jay was about to praise him for his wit, Jay shot him a deadly look full of daggers.

"OCD? Autism?" Jay sounded calm but there was definitely underlying anger in his tone.

Grayson's forehead started dripping beads of sweat.

Grayson bit his own tongue. Even though Master Jenson was a handful and a problematic child, he was still Mr. Ares's beloved son. The only person who was allowed to criticize Master Jenson was Mr. Ares.

If anyone dared to say bad-mouth Master Jenson, they were essentially digging their own graves.

Sure enough, Jay said in a dangerous voice, "Grayson, it seems that you know

voice, "Grayson, it seems that you know Jenson very well. Why don't I pass the responsibility of taking care of Jenson to you?"

As soon as Jay said that, Grayson's face fell and he begged for mercy,

"Mr. Ares, I have my entire family to take care of. Please forgive me. Master Jenson already made eleven drivers resign within the last seventeen days. Three of them had a relapse of high blood pressure and two of them were diagnosed with coronary heart disease from frustration. And five of them became so messed up that they couldn't find their way back home. And the last one even developed schizophrenia from the trauma..."

Jay self-righteously defended his son. "If they were already unhealthy from the get-go, a high-risk occupation such as a driver is obviously unsuitable for them."

Grayson was sweating profusely from the humiliation.

'Even Mr. Ares knows that being a driver for Jenson is a high-risk occupation,' he

for Jenson is a high-risk occupation,' he said to himself.

Grayson steeled himself and tried to defend the heroic drivers, "Mr. Ares, the dangerous part of the job wasn't the driving. It's just that Master Jenson is too ruthless."

"For example?" Jay said lightly.

Jay was always happy to learn about his son's actions.

"Take Mr. Zach for starters. He always had underlying blood pressure issues.

One day, Mr. Zach praised Master Jenson for his intelligence, but Master Jenson replied, "Not as much as you! You're a shining beacon of knowledge!" For context, Mr. Zach was bald. Therefore, when he heard Master Jenson's words, his high blood pressure relapsed on the spot.

"And there's also Mr. Lionel. He suffers from anxiety and his eyelids frequently twitch. Master Jenson managed to convince him that he had a serious muscular disorder. Poor Lionel got a

convince him that he had a serious muscular disorder. Poor Lionel got a panic attack and was sent to the hospital for emergency treatment."

Jay's eyebrows furrowed slightly.

'That sharp tongue of Jenson is seriously a force to be reckoned with.' he noted quietly.

Jay went into deep thought to analyze why Jenson acted the way he did.

Jay organized his thoughts. 'This kid has always hated strangers from the bottom of his heart and has always been very dependent on me.'

Something pulled on Jay's heartstrings. He made up his mind to make some significant arrangements to cure Jenson's rigid mindset.

"Grayson, we'll go with your plan," Jay said abruptly. "Find a way to coerce Rose to be Jenson's nanny."

Grayson looked rather bashful and mumbled, "But Miss Rose ran away.

Trying to catch her now would be as hard

mumbled, "But Miss Rose ran away. Trying to catch her now would be as hard as it was five years ago."

Jay snorted. "Oh, did she really?"

Grayson's eyes lit up with realization. Of course... Miss Rose has submitted her mother's application for hospitalization. She can no longer run away

'I guess Mr. Ares really did figure everything out.'

...

Splendid Town.

As soon as Rose got home, she hurried to the bathroom to clean up the signs of the abuse. Then, she changed into long sleeves and trousers before coming out.

When she saw her two kids silently binge-watching TV shows in the study room, she did not give much thought to it. Instead, she went to the kitchen to prepare their meals.

In the study, the two little kids were lying on the floor, staring intently at the

on the floor, staring intently at the monitor. After secretly making sure that Mommy left, Baby Robbie immediately ordered his sister, "Quick, go and shut the door. I have something nice to show you."

Zetty trotted quickly to the door and locked the door from the inside.

When she was done, she dashed back to her brother in anticipation.

"What did you want to show me?" Baby Zetty looked at Baby Robbie excitedly.

Baby Robbie held out his right hand that was clenched tightly into a fist. When he unfurled his fingers, there was a tie clip lying in his palm.

Unimpressed, Baby Zetty grumbled, "Isn't this just a tie clip?"

"This is no ordinary tie clip."

"At most, this is just a very expensive tie clip." Baby Zetty pursed her pink lips disdainfully.

Baby Robbie said mysteriously, "What do

Baby Robbie said mysteriously, "What do you know? This tie clip was taken from the bad guy who kidnapped Mommy. This is evidence. We can use this tie clip to find the criminal who kidnapped Mommy."

Baby Zetty looked at her brother in awe. "If we find the bad guy, can we avenge Mommy?"

Baby Robbie's eyes glowed with anger. "Of course. I'm all grown up. As a young man, I vow to protect you and Mommy forever."

Baby Zetty took the tie clip and lifted it up to observe it. "How can we trace a tie clip back to its owner?"

Baby Robbie smiled slyly. "Look at the words on the tie clip."

Baby Zetty turned over and saw the embossed words on the tie clip.

"Jay Ares!" Zetty read the name aloud.

Baby Robbie turned up the volume of the show they were watching but the video player was reduced to the bottom right

player was reduced to the bottom right corner.

He then opened the internet browser and searched for “Jay Ares”.

"I knew it. That jerk who stays in the president's lounge of Grand Asia Hospital is a big tycoon. Look, Zetty. That guy's the president of Grand Asia Hospital... Whoa, that's a huge net worth"

Robbie browsed through Jay's Baidu Baike page. He moaned, “Too bad there's no photo of him.”

Zetty said sagely, "Villains like him wouldn't dare to post their pictures.”

Robbie suddenly gave a wicked smile. "Hmph. How dare you bully Mommy. Just you wait, I'll give you a taste of my fury.”

After a few moments of fiddling, Robbie finished his handiwork.

He used his hacker pseudonym—Master Robbie—to hack into Grand Asia Hospital's network where he tampered with the network security key. He altered Grand

After a few moments of fiddling, Robbie finished his handiwork.

He used his hacker pseudonym—Master Robbie—to hack into Grand Asia Hospital's network where he tampered with the network security key. He altered Grand Asia's elegant web page interface into a crashed system in the form of a challenge that read:

"Jay Ares, how dare you bully beautiful girls? Show your face so we can have a fair fight, man to man! If you can beat my challenge, good for you. Oh yeah, have I mentioned that I'm five years old..."

When he was done, Robbie switched off the computer and the two tiny "adults" went outside to have their lunch as if nothing had happened.

Almost immediately, the people of Grand Asia discovered the anomaly in the network. They notified Jay in a trice.

"Mr. Ares, Bad news! Our network has been compromised by hackers!"

*Sir Ares,
Goodnight!*



Sir Ares, Goodnight!

Yan An

Language: English

Even after two lifetimes, Rose still could not melt the ice-cold heart of Jay Ares. Heartbroken, she decides to live under the guise of an idiot, tricking him and running away with their two children. This infuriates Sir Ares to no end, and everyone around them is certain that this will prove to be Rose's ultimate demise. However, upon the next day, the great Sir Ares is seen getting down on one knee in the middle of the street, coaxing the little brat, "Please be good and come home with me!" "I will, but only if you agree to my terms!" "Speak your mind!" "You are not allowed to bully me, lie to me, and especially not show your displeased face at me. You must always regard me as the most beautiful person, and you must smile whenever I cross your mind..." "Fine!" Onlookers are floored at sight of this! Is this the myth of how there is a



Read

Chapter 11

As soon as Jay received the notification, he snapped open the homepage of Grand Asia Hospital.

When he saw the provocative challenge, the look on his face could kill someone.

"Master Robbie?" Jay narrowed his eyes and his lips became dangerously thin. "Hehe. Have I been too kind? Is that why some people still aren't afraid of digging their graves?"

The room seemed to drop to subzero temperature and everyone present held bated breaths. All of them feared that they would be the next victim of the president's anger.

'Too kind? Who, Mr. Ares? As if,' Grayson thought privately in his head. 'Everyone agrees that he's the reincarnation of the King of Hell. Nobody would ever dare to touch a single strand of his hair!'

That was, of course, with the exception of the curious Rose.

Jay's potent, chilling gaze fell between Grayson and the monitor. "Did you find who this Master Robbie is?"

Grayson lowered his head. Shame-faced, he said, "Our network department has dispatched our best hackers but we haven't been able to get past the hacker's firewall. We're currently unable to find any information about this Master Robbie."

Jay's handsome face darkened. He said coldly, "I'll give you two choices. Either find out who this person is yourself or get help from Jenson."

'Jenson?'

Grayson shivered when he heard Master Jenson's name.

Master Jenson had indeed inherited Mr. Ares's talents and, combined with his rigorous training since he was a baby, Master Jenson was arguably the ultimate hacker in the hacker world.

But to seek help from the demonic Jenson? It would be impossible to avoid

Jenson? It would be impossible to avoid getting sliced to ribbons by his sharp tongue. Grayson would also have to look forward to the kid's deadly sarcasm and other surprises.

Grayson's gaze fell on Mr. Ares's slender finger. He wondered if he could ask Mr. Ares to request for Jenson's help in his stead. If the president asked his son personally, the whole matter would be solved within minutes.

"Mr. Ares, how about you go back—"

Before Grayson could finish his sentence, Jay scoffed with disdain, "Do I look like I have all the time in the world?"

Jay stared coldly at Grayson, his gaze sharp as a knife. "Get out."

Grayson wiped his cold sweat as he exited Mr. Ares's office.

When Grayson returned to the Cyber Security Department, he announced seriously, "Listen up. Unless you no longer want to spend Valentine's Day with your loved ones or spend your New

with your loved ones or spend your New Years' video chatting with your friends, someone had better find out who this Master Robbie is."

Everyone immediately went back to work in despair.

After everyone in the Cyber Security Department individually tried to decipher Master Robbie's firewall for the nth time, Grayson knew he had no choice but to ask Jenson for help.

Jenson answered the phone but said nothing.

"Master Jenson, what are you up to?"

Grayson was not sure how to bring up the subject and chose to beat around the bush a little.

"You have a favor to ask of me?" Jenson asked coolly.

Grayson was taken aback. Master Jenson was as astute as ever!

"Grand Asia was attacked by hackers.

Master Jenson, could you be so kind as to spare some of your precious time to help

Master Jenson, could you be so kind as to spare some of your precious time to help us restore the system?"

Jenson said airily, "I see... But no."

Grayson sighed helplessly when he heard the beep from the other end of the line.

Grayson hung up the phone and returned his gaze to the monitor.

It was the homepage of Grand Asia's website. The hacker had set up a string of 2D passwords which gave the impression of a kindergartener's prank.

Grayson was so annoyed that his balls started aching. 'Master Robbie sounds like an old-fashioned name but the design looks like it was done by a three-year-old. Even Jenson wouldn't dream of designing such a password.'

Grayson toughened up and called Jenson again.

Jenson answered the phone with gritted teeth. "What?"

"Yo, Master Jenson! Could you please

"Yo, Master Jenson! Could you please lend a hand to Uncle Gray?"

"Is Grand Asia going to pay me?"

Hic! Grayson felt like his soul was leaving his body. "Master Jenson, Grand Asia is your daddy's company. Of course, he's going to make you the heir in the future."

"Not interested."

"Anyway, you wouldn't want to see someone bully your daddy like that, right?"

Click—

Grayson looked at the phone defeatedly. Jenson had hung up, again. "How can I get through to this kid?" Grayson grumbled exasperatedly.

Meanwhile, in the villa in City South that expanded into the horizon...

Jenson sat in front of his computer, staring at the challenge on the website. His handsome face was emotionless. However, the faint anger resonating from his eyes made him look even more like a

However, the faint anger resonating from his eyes made him look even more like a tiny replica of Jay.

The same cold and unmoving attitude. The same expressionless face.

‘Daddy bullying beautiful girls? Daddy is not that kind of person!’

Jenson effortlessly deciphered the string of 2D passwords and spat, “Childish!”

Not only did he restore the normal network of Grand Asia, but he also managed to find the IP address of the hacker’s computer with some effort. The location revealed it to be in the microdistrict of City North’s Splendid Town.

Then, he picked up the phone and called his father. “Pay up,” he said shortly.

Jay noticed that Grand Asia's crashed network had already resumed its usual operating mode.

“What do you want?” Jay was never stingy when rewarding his son. □

his father. "Pay up," he said shortly.

Jay noticed that Grand Asia's crashed network had already resumed its usual operating mode.

"What do you want?" Jay was never stingy when rewarding his son.

"Mommy," Jenson uttered.

Jay simply could not understand why his son had become so obsessed with his mother again lately.

'Everything's about his mommy. Lego? Mommy. Reward? Mommy. Can it be that this little guy knows that Rose is back?'

Finally, he said, "If you want to see your mommy, you have to promise Daddy something first. You have to learn how to get along with people and how to communicate with them. In a few days, Daddy will find a nanny for you to take care of your meals and live with you. If you can get along with her, I promise to let you see Mommy."



Chapter 12

Splendid Town.

When Rose received a sudden call from Grand Asia Hospital, she immediately feared that the hospital was going to refuse to treat her seriously ill mother.

"Miss Rose, we're pleased to inform you that the admission application that you've submitted to our hospital yesterday has been accepted. Due to the special nature of your mother's case, the hospital made an exception for her and allowed her to be hospitalized in Grand Asia Hospital. We have already transferred the patient to the hospital in advance. Please pay the hospitalization fee of three hundred thousand yuan within twenty-four hours."

Rose was dumbstruck.

When she went to Grand Asia to submit her mother's application for admission yesterday, she was rejected by the staff for various incomprehensible reasons. However, Grand Asia then miraculously

However, Grand Asia then miraculously transferred her mother to their hospital the day itself without notifying her.

There could only be one explanation—Jay had gotten involved. Rose instantly shot at the caller angrily, "Who gave you permission to transfer my mother to the hospital without authorization? You had better return my mother back to where she transferred from. Otherwise, I will sue."

Suddenly, a cold voice came from the other end of the call, "Oh, Rose..."

The familiar adrenaline-surgingly voice that contained an air of superiority immediately made all the hairs on Rose's body stand straight up. However, she mustered the courage to reply.

"Ja... Ja... Sir Ares..."

Jay frowned and said coolly, "Grandpa? I'm not that much older than you."

Rose was taken aback and choked violently. She was just trying to get on his good side. ◀ Obviously, that's not what I

good side. 'Obviously, that's not what I meant!'

It was true that he was not much older than her.

"Why, someone told me that you're going to sue me?" Jay's haughty voice had an air of indifference that made him sound even more mesmerizing.

"What great timing. I've been meaning to confront you about the matter five years ago before we go to court.

The incident five years ago? The incident where she raped him during the end of their marriage?

'If the thing gets blown up, what good would it do for him?' Rose thought. 'I'm not scared!'

"I'd be honored to be able to see you in court, Sir Ares," she sniffed. "I'll have to thank you for having my name make all sorts of headlines when the time comes!"

It took Rose a lot of courage to retort with those words. After toughening up and giving it to him, she heard Jay's stony

giving it to him, she heard Jay's stony voice saying, "How shameless."

Rose answered sarcastically, "What about using my mother as leverage? Isn't that shameless as well?"

"Rose, it seems like I'm getting to know the real you better now. What sharp wit you have. Aren't you afraid that your words may cause more harm to your mother?" Jay had always been a natural hunter. When he had his prey in his clutches, he made sure to prod their weak spots until they fell onto their knees.

It only took a split second for Rose to change from her gallant and spirited self to the old oppressed Rose. 'Hmph! Damn you, Jay! I knew you'd threaten me with her, you lowlife!' Rose's mind slandered him but her mouth opened to form a plea for mercy. "My bad, Sir Ares."

"You're asking for forgiveness now?" Jay's thin lips twitched upward. "You really are something!"

Rose pretended to be not affected and smiled. "As long as you let go of my

smiled. "As long as you let go of my mother, I'll obey you to the word. I'll do whatever you say."

Jay's lips twitched into a ferocious sneer. He wondered why he had never realized what a good actress she was before.

"Rose, I'll be waiting for you at the Grand Asia Hospital to discuss your mother's treatment. If I don't see you within 30 minutes, your mother may be treated by an intern. Sorry about that." With those words, he hung up.

Rose wept silently as she looked at the phone.

She had only just escaped Jay's evil lair yesterday but then she had to walk into his claws again on her own accord.

'If I don't go, will Mom be in danger?'

'Mom has late-stage uremia. The specialists are already having a hard time treating her. If she was handed over to the interns, she'd be dead in minutes?'

"Ugh!" Rose sighed heavily. □

"Ugh..."

After the nth sigh...

Zetty and Robbie were discussing in whispers in the corner. Zetty asked Robbie, "Why is Mommy sighing?"

Robbie cleared his throat and said wisely, "Maybe she's going through menopause. A few of my classmates' moms acted like that when they were going through menopause. They're sighing all day. From the moment they wake up, they'll either scold their husbands or their sons. Other than that, they just sigh. Since our mommy doesn't have a husband to scold and we're such good kids, the only thing left for her to do is sigh."

Zetty felt bad for her mommy. She put down the toy model in her hand and walked over to her mother and gently held her head. She said sweetly, "Mommy, I'll find a husband for you so that you'll be able to scold him when you're in a bad mood."

Rose was at a loss for words. 'What kind of logic is that?'

"Mommy's not in a bad mood. Mommy just needs to go to the hospital to fight some monsters with your grandma. You two be good and stay at home..." Rose squeezed Zetty's baby face.

When Robbie heard the hospital mentioned, he knocked over the wooden toy blocks and his stubby legs ran quickly into the house to grab a weapon.

"Mommy, if that bad man from yesterday bullies you again, you should spray his eyes with this." Robbie held in his hand a cosmetic bottle with a nozzle that was clearly not a skincare product.

"What's this?"

"Enhanced pepper spray," Robbie said mysteriously. "If you use this, I won't have to worry about you bumping into that bad man again!"

Rose placed the pepper spray into her handbag. Since Jay already knew that she faked her own death, she did not bother with a disguise.



She dressed like her usual self when she

She dressed like her usual self when she exited the house, wearing her favorite white shirt and green fitted skirt, wavy maroon hair spilling over her shoulders. She put on light makeup and high heels.

As soon as Rose took a step out of the door, Robbie and Zetty leaned on the window and watched as their mother walked away.

"Why did Mommy dress up so nicely today?" There was doubt in Robbie's dark, shiny pupils.

Zetty huffed innocently, "This is something out of your expertise. Mommy must be planning to use her beauty as a weapon!"

Robbie rolled his eyes. "As long as that doesn't backfire on her," he mumbled.

Zetty was excited, "Are we going to have a daddy soon?"

Robbie fell silent with his mouth agape.

Grand Asia Hospital.



Invest in the president's office and

weapon!"

Robbie rolled his eyes. "As long as that doesn't backfire on her," he mumbled.

Zetty was excited, "Are we going to have a daddy soon?"

Robbie fell silent with his mouth agape.

Grand Asia Hospital.

Jay sat in the president's office and looked at his watch. It had been more than half an hour. In fact, forty minutes had passed...

Did that accursed woman chicken out?

Was her promise on her phone just empty words.

His tall, lean body stood up. "Grayson, get my car," he barked.

Grayson was stunned. "Mr. Ares, aren't we waiting for Rose?"

"You actually think she has the nerve?" Jay spat incredulously.



Chapter 13

As he spoke, the door was pushed open and an attractive secretary poked her head through.

The secretary respectfully said, "Mr. Ares, there is a pretty lady here for you." She sounded rather excited and gossipy.

Grayson told her off, "Don't you know that Mr. Ares's office prohibits females from entering arbitrarily? Send her away."

Jay actually wondered momentarily if it was the accursed woman, Rose. However, when he heard the secretary describing the woman as pretty, he dismissed the thought.

'That mundane and shapeless Rose with her dated style could never be described with that word.'

The secretary closed the door and returned to the reception desk. She said demurely, "I'm sorry, Miss. Mr. Ares isn't accepting guests now."

Rose lifted her chestnut curls and took a deep breath to suppress her anger. Then she huffed, "Your president invited me himself. What's the meaning of him turning me away now? I've already done my part and surrendered. Why is he treating me like I'm less than a human being?"

The secretary was stunned. In all her years of working in Grand Asia, that was the first time she had ever heard someone insult Mr. Ares so courageously.

Jay and Grayson walked out of the office and headed to the elevator. On the way, they heard Rose's raised voice and turned around to see what was happening at the secretary's desk.

When the secretary noticed the annoyed and bloodthirsty look in Mr. Ares's eyes, she quickly pretended to organize her desk.

Jay stood directly behind Rose as she remorselessly continued to list out his wrongdoings. "The customer is always right. If it wasn't for our money paying

right. If it wasn't for our money paying him, how would he run his business?"

"Oh, Rose..." Jay growled her name from behind through gritted teeth.

Rose almost fell to the ground from the sudden voice. She whirled around to see Jay with his hands in his pockets, glaring daggers at her. The only thing Rose could do was smile sheepishly at him.

'F*ck.' She had been full of resentment and needed to vent. The thought of Jay not allowing any women near him made her so exasperated that she could not help but ridicule everything about Jay to the sweet secretary of his. Much to her surprise and dismay, Mr. Ares caught her in the act.

She wondered if the misfortunes were piling up on her because she did not pray to the gods before leaving the house.

"Sir Ares!" Rose changed her demeanor instantly. However, her nervousness caused her to touch her bag uncontrollably.



"Come in with me." Jay turned and walked into the office.

Rose remembered the atrocities that occurred in the office yesterday and hesitated. "Sir Ares, how about we have our chat outside here? I'm really busy today, can you just tell me—"

Jay stopped in his tracks and turned to glare at her.

"How busy are you?"

Rose quickly took back what she said. "No, no, no. I mean, you're the Sir Ares. You probably have a million things to do today. I don't want to take up too much time of yours. Why don't you just say what you wanted to tell me here?"

Jay stared at his watch intently. He finally gritted his teeth and asked, "Rose, do you want to see Jenson?"

In a trice, Rose flew like the wind and rushed up to Jay.

Jay spared her a contemptuous look and walked into the office.

Rose did not hesitate this time and obediently followed Jay into the room.

Jay sat down on his black swivel chair and stared at the pretentious woman in front of him.

He was honestly a little surprised to find that she looked like an actual human being when she was dressed up!

He proceeded to toss a contract in front of Rose. With an overbearing tone, he said, "Sign it."

Rose took the contract warily and quickly scanned the relevant details in the contract. As she reached the end, she could not help but protest, "This is a typical clause of a capitalist tyrant. I won't accept it." She threw the contract back to Jay.

It was a medical exemption contract that asked for Grand Asia to be given permission to use her mother as a guinea pig for new technology. If her mother died from it, Grand Asia would only have to pay a meager compensation. On top of that, family members could not appeal

to pay a meager compensation. On top of that, family members could not appeal against them on any grounds.

If she were to sign the contract, she would basically be selling her mother off to Grand Asia Hospital.

Rose was not stupid. She sneered at Jay, "I see you just love threatening me with my mother. Sir Ares, I know you want revenge. So give it to me straight! Don't take it out on a dying old lady. Aren't you afraid of retribution?"

Jay looked at Rose and raised an eyebrow. "You yourself just said that I'm a capitalist. Does it make sense for a capitalist to willingly suffer a loss when dealing with business?"

Rose straightened her neck and said, "As long as I don't sign the contract, it won't take effect. I would never do business with you!"

Rose had a stubborn look on her face.

Jay's next words sounded like a death sentence. "Do you think I can't afford to

sentence. "Do you think I can't afford to pay for medical negligence if your mother died in Grand Asia?"

Hic—

Rose was jolted awake.

Her mother's life was in Jay's hands the moment she was transferred into the hospital.

Whether she signed the contract or not, her mother's fate could not be changed. The only thing that could change was how much that capitalist was willing to compensate.

He wanted to be free from compensation.

The stingy, evil tycoon.

Jay turned the contract to the last page which Rose had not read and handed it back to her. He whispered haughtily, "You should decide whether or not to agree after reading this."

Rose took it suspiciously, read the contents of the contract page, and found herself stuck on the paragraph. □

herself stuck on the paragraph.

According to the contract, Jay was using her mother as a hostage to force her to be Jenson's nanny.

'Haha!' Rose nearly snorted at that moment.

She considered that a wonderful opportunity. She would likely agree even if Jay did not threaten her mother.

She missed her first baby so much!

However—Rose was unnerved when she looked at Jay.

Why would this guy give her such a wonderful thing without a catch?

Jay looked at Rose's doubtful face, unsure if she would follow along with his plan.

"Are you really going to let me see our son?" Rose asked skeptically.

"Rose, watch your words," Jay said testily. "He's my son, not yours." He spelled it out word by word.


"I'll allow you to see him, but with one

She considered that a wonderful opportunity. She would likely agree even if Jay did not threaten her mother.

She missed her first baby so much!

However—Rose was unnerved when she looked at Jay.

Why would this guy give her such a wonderful thing without a catch?

Jay looked at Rose's doubtful face, unsure if she would follow along with his plan.

"Are you really going to let me see our son?" Rose asked skeptically.

"Rose, watch your words," Jay said testily. "He's my son, not yours." He spelled it out word by word.

"I'll allow you to see him, but with one condition—"

"And that is?"

"Without my permission, you can never tell him that you're his mother."



Chapter 14

In any case, Rose would not have dared to identify herself to Jenson. Seeing him was already a blessing she was grateful for.

"I accept!" Rose said assertively, loud and clear as she stared into Jay's deterrent eyes.

Her gaze fell on the pen in Jay's hand but Jay tightened his grip on it as if he did not mean to lend it to her at all.

Unperturbed, Rose opened her delicate leather handbag to get a pen to sign the contract.

Jay watched closely as Rose took out the contents in her bag one by one and placed them on his desk. His eyes suddenly fell on the transparent cosmetic bottle and he frowned at the unusual foamy liquid inside it.

‘Pepper spray?’

Rose finally felt a pen at the bottom of her bag and put all the contents back inside, one by one. When she picked up the

one by one. When she picked up the pepper-spray, she saw Jay' scoff.

"I thought only fragile bimbos carried things like that. I didn't know all women owned them!" Jay sneered.

Rose did not get angry but smiled instead. "I only take it out rarely depending on where I go and who I meet."

A crack appeared on Jay's icy face. 'You dare get mouthy with me?'

"Just sign the contract and get out of here."
" Jay just wanted her out of his sight.

Rose grabbed the pen and signed her name above the dotted line. Her signature looked like chicken scrawling.

'I can't bear to look at it!' Jay thought incredulously.

Jay harshly belittled her, "Your handwriting looks just like you!"

Since Rose entered the room, he had been treating her with disdain the entire time.

In response, she scratched her initial signature off with two held horizontal

In response, she scratched her initial signature off with two bold horizontal lines and proceeded to redo the signature next to it.

Her handwriting became vigorous and robust, magnificent and elegant, and had a powerful style.

Jay gaped at the signature in the lower right corner of the contract with surprise.

"Since when could you write like that? Why did you do it so badly just now?" Jay asked, confused.

"The quality of my handwriting is inconsistent," Rose sniffed. "My fonts come out differently depending on who's reading it."

Jay sneered, "Very well, you can leave now."

Rose flashed a confident smile and bid farewell to Jay, "See you again, Sir Ares!"

Jay stowed away the contract and an evil leer appeared on his handsome face. "

Good luck, Rose."



Rose shivered. 'What was that supposed to mean?'

When Rose got home, she happily shared the good news with her kids. "Mommy found a new job. From tomorrow onward, mommy will have to go to work."

Robbie and Zetty looked at their mother pitifully. "Mommy, we're always looking forward to your food all day. Who's going to get us food when you're at work?"

Rose had figured out a solution since the beginning, "I've already contacted a very good kindergarten to enroll you two. You guys can go to school tomorrow!"

When they heard the declaration, the two kids whooped with joy. They loved nothing more than to meet new people and make new friends.

The next day, Rose woke her babies before sunrise and drove them to the gate of their kindergarten.

Since it was still very early, the school had not opened yet so the poor little kiddos were left stranded outside the

kiddos were left stranded outside the kindergarten and had to wait. "Mommy, why do we have to come so early?"

Rose looked anxiously at her watch. "Because Mommy needs to go to work. I'll be late if I don't go now." She did not want to leave Jenson with a bad impression for the first meeting.

Robbie and Zetty blinked their sleepy eyes. "Mommy, hurry up then! We can just wait for kindergarten to open."

Rose kissed her kids. "Have fun in school!"

...

In City South that blended into the horizon.

Jay and Jenson sat at the table while they enjoyed their breakfast: freshly ground soy milk and sandwiches.

Jay looked up at the clock on the wall—it was fifteen minutes to eight.

'If Rose is late, Jenson will have a terrible first impression of her.

‘Yesterday, she was half an hour late. For someone with no time management like her... I look forward to Jenson giving her a special welcome.’

After breakfast, Jay explained to Jenson what was going to happen, though he spoke with ulterior motives.

"No matter how many shortcomings your new nanny has, promise me that you'll bear with them. Daddy won't replace anyone for a month. Otherwise, you can forget about seeing your mommy!"

Jenson looked annoyed; the conditions were making him feel uncomfortable.

Even though the man restricting him was his beloved daddy.

When it was almost eight o'clock, just as Jay was sure that Rose would be late, the villa's doorbell suddenly rang.

‘A woman like Rose arriving on time?’ He was caught by surprise.

Jenson rushed to the door in his slippers and stood on his tiptoes to open the door latch

and stood on his tiptoes to open the door latch.

Jay held his breath.

He really wanted to know what sort of chemistry would exist between Jenson and Rose when they met—Jenson was never good with guests.

When Jay did not hear the expected excited chattering from Rose, the silence outside became ominous.

Unnerved, Jay decided to walk over to see.

The sight that greeted him was a Lego Batman in Rose's hand and Jenson's eyes staring keenly at the gift. Jay's expression instantly changed.

He knew that Rose was an expert at buttering up people, but how did she know that Jenson loved Legos? On top of that, she got the Batman Lego series which was Jenson's favorite.

Rose looked at Jenson. At that moment, she felt that her dream of the past five years was finally granted but she could not help but find it bittersweet. □

‘Jenson looks exactly like Baby Robbie.

‘But Jenson is covered with a cold and depressing aura.

‘It hurts my heart!

‘Baby Robbie is like a summer day, always bright and laughing. What a kid should look like.

‘But Jenson is so reserved. Even after seeing his favorite toy, his eyes are indifferent and lifeless.’

Rose squatted down and gently rubbed Jenson's thick and soft black hair. "Do you like it?"

Jenson instinctively denied it, "No, I don't." He then turned around and walked away haughtily.

Jay leaned against the door panel and noted Rose's deflated expression. His grin grew wider.

Rose glared at him angrily. ‘If it weren't for the genes of this cold and antisocial jerk, Jenson would not have turned out this way, she thought scathingly.

‘But Jenson is so reserved. Even after seeing his favorite toy, his eyes are indifferent and lifeless.’

Rose squatted down and gently rubbed Jenson's thick and soft black hair. "Do you like it?"

Jenson instinctively denied it, "No, I don't." He then turned around and walked away haughtily.

Jay leaned against the door panel and noted Rose's deflated expression. His grin grew wider.

Rose glared at him angrily. ‘If it weren't for the genes of this cold and antisocial jerk, Jenson would not have turned out this way,’ she thought scathingly.

Rose entered the house through the familiar doorway and took the familiar route to the shoe rack to retrieve a pair of single-use guest slippers. Once she changed into them, she walked toward Jenson while carefully ignoring Jay.



Chapter 15

Rose placed the Lego gift on the table in front of Jenson and deftly unboxed the package. She tried to break the ice with Jenson as she took out the parts inside and started assembling Lego pieces.

"Jenson, how about a race? Let's see who can build faster."

Jay went upstairs and just overheard Rose's overreaching challenge to Jenson. A fresh sneer appeared on his face.

Jay had personally taught Jenson how to program. Assembling even the most complicated Lego model was a piece of cake for him.

'An uneducated wench like Rose probably never even heard of programming. Is she really that naive to think that she'll be able to put together that Batman model?'

Jenson did not immediately give Rose an answer.

Instead, he silently grabbed the Lego from Rose's hand, glanced at the clock on

from Rose's hand, glanced at the clock on the wall, and began to piece them together.

Rose looked surprised. 'Did Jenson just agree to compete with me?'

What followed was a lengthy session of building Legos!

Jay changed into his work clothes and went downstairs. He saw the two of them looking very peaceful and harmonious.

Jenson was assembling his Legos while Rose sat next to him, quietly watching him.

The corner of Jay's mouth curved into a sneer. He could almost foresee what was going to happen next.

'A chatterbox like Rose won't be able to endure a few hours of silence.' The moment she utters a word, my noise intolerant son will start throwing a fit. First, he'll smash his Legos...

'Out of courtesy, Rose will likely creep away quietly to bid farewell to me.'

"Miss Rose, take good care of Jenson. I hope you won't let me down." Jay wore his freshly ironed suit and his sharp eyes were narrowed. He looked like a dignified man with unrivaled qualities.

For some reason, Rose knew that he was up to something when she saw his smile. One look told her that he was the type of person who would gleefully watch the world burn in front of him.

Rose forced a bright smile. "Don't worry, Sir Ares. I'll have a good time with Jenson."
"

Jay left with a malicious look on his face.

Rose rolled her eyes behind his back.

She went back to Jenson who was still focused on Lego building.

When Rose looked at him, she could see a hint of disgust in Jenson's eyes. Rose frowned slightly. 'The environment plays such a big role in shaping people,' Rose observed. 'Jenson probably spent too much time staring at Jay's stiff and emotionless face that he became such a

emotionless face that he became such a reserved child.'

In order not to disturb Jenson, Rose took out a sketchbook that she carried in her bag and began to sketch Jenson's portrait.

Rose did not have to keep looking at Jenson because she was already so familiar with Baby Robbie's eyebrows. The rest of the portrait was a breeze for her. She was able to draw Jenson's appearance vividly save for his indifferent expression. When Rose highlighted that part of his face, she could not help but feel a pang of sorrow.

Two hours later, Jenson completed the Lego model.

Rose hid her drawing in a hurry and smilingly took the Lego over and began disassembling it. Just as she was about to start her timer, Jenson ditched her and slouched upstairs. After a while, he came back down with a school bag slung over his shoulders.

Rose was dumbfounded. She looked at the clock. It was already past ten. 'Jenson's

Rose was dumbfounded. She looked at the clock. It was already past ten. 'Jenson's only going to school at this time?' she wondered.

"Jenson, are you going to school?"

Rose put down the Lego in her hands and ran after Jenson.

After Jenson walked out of the house, he looked over at Rose from the car park.

The foundation of the communication between them was based on Rose guessing what he was feeling. "Do you want me to drive?"

Jenson did not nod or shake his head.

Rose said, "Your daddy didn't give me the car key. Why don't we go outside and get a taxi?"

Jenson coolly spat out a single word, "Dirty!"

He turned around and continued walking.

Rose was completely baffled by the kid's unconventional thought process.

She whipped out her phone to ask Jay about it.

Jay was in a company meeting when he received the call and he momentarily lost focus. With a sudden smile, he answered the phone in front of all the employees.

"Rose, it's only been two hours. Are you calling me to hand in your resignation?"

Grayson's mouth twitched compulsively from beside Mr. Ares.

'It's already going against the normal rules for her to be alone with Jenson for two hours. Is everything okay?'

"Sir Ares, I'm afraid you've misunderstood. In order to take better care of Jenson, I just wanted to take a look at Jenson's schedule."

"He doesn't have one."

"How about a copy of his kindergarten hours?"

"Rose—" Jay paused. "Can't you see that Jenson has autism? He doesn't go to school like a normal child!"

When Rose took a long time to reply, Jay frowned.

Unexpectedly, Rose started raging from the other line. "You're the one with autism, not him," she snapped before hanging up angrily.

Jay stared at the phone and his face grew pale.

'That foul woman dares to hang up on me?'

'So that's where Jenson got that bad habit from!'

On the other side of the line.

Jenson was slightly taken aback when he heard the hysterical yells of the woman behind him.

It had been confirmed ages ago that he had autism.

'If Daddy refuses to admit that I have autism, he's only lying to himself. This woman must be crazy to deny it.'

"Jenson!"



Rose ran over and grabbed Jenson's small hand.

Jenson naturally hated people touching him, so he instinctively brushed Rose's hand away.

Rose looked hurt. However, she firmly said, "Jenson, you should go to school!"

"It's not your place to say that!" Jenson said angrily.

Rose was taken aback. 'This child is so defensive and has a sharp tongue. I'm afraid that his teachers and classmates won't like him if he goes to kindergarten. If such a vicious cycle went on, Jenson will probably hate school more and more over time.

'But if a kid his age doesn't go to school, it'll only make things worse.'

Jenson turned and walked back into the house. As Rose tried to follow him in, Jenson slammed the door in her face and locked it.

Rose hit her head on the door panel. In

Rose hit her head on the door panel. In order to get Jenson to open the door, Rose knew that she had to use her marvelous acting skills. She held her forehead and let out a terrible howl. "Ah! My head! It hurts so much—"

At first, Jenson did not respond.

However, Rose persevered and cried continuously. Eventually, Jenson was worried that something serious might have happened, so he unlocked the door to check up on the woman and see if she needed an ambulance.

However, as soon as Jenson opened the door, Rose dashed into the house. She looked at him smugly, having successfully deceived him.

"Liar," Jenson mumbled, annoyed.

Rose patted his head and smiled. "It's very impolite to shut your guests out."

"You're a guest?" Jenson puffed angrily at her.

"If not, am I the owner, then?" Rose said

hurts so much—"

At first, Jenson did not respond.

However, Rose persevered and cried continuously. Eventually, Jenson was worried that something serious might have happened, so he unlocked the door to check up on the woman and see if she needed an ambulance.

However, as soon as Jenson opened the door, Rose dashed into the house. She looked at him smugly, having successfully deceived him.

"Liar," Jenson mumbled, annoyed.

Rose patted his head and smiled. "It's very impolite to shut your guests out."

"You're a guest?" Jenson puffed angrily at her.

"If not, am I the owner, then?" Rose said sarcastically.

"Crazy woman!" Jenson snapped.

Rose fell silent.



Chapter 16

“Children shouldn't swear,” Rose reprimanded Jenson reproachfully.

Jenson glared at her and stormed upstairs, locking his room door behind him.

Rose stared at the shut door and let out a sad sigh.

‘What should I do with Jenson?’

He was the child whom she owed the most.

She did not know how to even begin to make up for the maternal love he had been denied for so many years.

She glanced at the clock and realized that it was getting late.

Rose went to the kitchen and decided to whip up a hearty lunch for Jenson.

The refrigerator was filled with various ingredients but Rose had no clue as to what Jenson would like. At that moment, she had never felt more sorry for Jenson

what Jenson would like. At that moment, she had never felt more sorry for Jenson —she had failed as his mother.

In the end, she made a few dishes that Baby Robbie would have liked. ‘Since Baby Robbie and Jenson have the same genes, they probably have the same taste buds!’ she thought hopefully.

Rose prepared a savory meal consisting of sweet and sour pork ribs, red braised beef, a plate of “Ants climbing a tree”, some sweet potato noodles with pork belly, and a seaweed egg drop soup.

Those dishes were typically made in humble homes.

Naturally, a wealthy tycoon household such as the Ares Family would rarely have this sort of meal served to them.

Just as Rose was done preparing the food, Jay returned.

When he noted the aromatic and delicious-looking dishes on the table, Jay was a little surprised.



He had always known Rose to be a terrible

He had always known Rose to be a terrible cook, judging on his memories when they were married, at least.

‘When did her cooking skills get this good?’

‘Perhaps this is a food delivery?’

"Sir Ares, why are you back?" Rose asked, puzzled.

‘Wouldn’t a big president like Jay usually be busy with tons of state affairs every day? Going home at noon doesn’t seem efficient. Did he come back just to supervise me?’

"Did you order out for Jenson?" Jay’s handsome face stiffened with anger.

Without waiting for Rose to answer, he growled, “My Jenson doesn’t eat outside food.”

Rose explained indignantly, "I made this myself!"

Jay was slightly taken aback but a gloating grin appeared on his face. "Jenson doesn't eat meals made by

gloating grin appeared on his face. "Jenson doesn't eat meals made by strangers." He deliberately emphasized the word "strangers". Deflated, Rose bowed her head sadly.

However, Rose snapped to attention a second later—she realized that Jay must have returned to cook for Jenson!

She felt rather touched; the almighty Jay still had to bow down and serve his son.

Rose's pleading gaze fell onto Jay's face and she implored, "Please, Sir Ares, don't tell him that these dishes were made by me."

Jay scoffed. "Do you honestly think that your food qualifies to pass off as mine?"

Rose bit her lip. "If you let Jenson try the food I made, I... won't eat lunch today."

Jay nodded with some satisfaction and called out, "Jenson, come down to eat."

It took a long time for Jenson to open the door and slouch downstairs.

As he stood by the stairs, he saw the

As he stood by the stairs, he saw the strange dishes and speculated that those dishes were not Daddy's masterpieces. Then, he spat scornfully, "I won't eat this."

Jay said tartly, "I ordered this meal for you, so at least eat a little of it. Daddy was really busy today and didn't have time to cook for you."

Jenson walked toward the dining table with every sign of annoyance, sat down, snatched the chopsticks, and began to eat.

Jay sat across from Jenson, picked up the chopsticks that Rose prepared for herself and lifted a piece of red braised beef to his mouth.

The way Jay looked when he ate was very charming. His chiseled face probably had the world's sharpest jawline. With every bite and swallow, his sexy neck was simply mesmerizing.

After five years of separation, Rose thought that all her love for the man had faded away with time. Now, she realized that putting him out of sight and out of

faded away with time. Now, she realized that putting him out of sight and out of mind was just a way of deceiving herself.

All she had to do was look at him a few more times and she would eventually fall head over heels for him again.

She could never escape the two lifetimes' affection no matter how hard she tried to hide. Somehow, in the end, the two of them always reunited. 'Is this God's salvation, or punishment?'

The piece of red braised beef that Jay popped into his mouth was tender and soft, melting inside his mouth.

Furthermore, the mildly spicy flavor was palatable for children. It was also a good appetizer for someone like him who could not stomach spicy food due to gastric problems.

Jenson, who sat opposite to him, was frowning with distaste at first. After a few nibbles, however, his eyes were blinking with surprise.

"Where did you order this from?" Jenson suddenly asked.

"Where did you order this from?" Jenson suddenly asked.

Rose looked at Jay nervously, wondering how he would try to talk his way out of this.

Without hesitation, he calmly told Jenson, "Don't talk so much when you're eating or you'll get indigestion."

Rose, "..."

Honestly, Rose was not so much relieved by Jay's save as a little sad.

Jenson was already a very reserved boy, yet Jay still used his old-fashioned rules to restrain him further. Jenson was like a bird in a cage, she thought, trapped and suffocated.

When will he be free to act like a normal kid?

When they finished their lunch, Rose cleaned up the table quickly and made some small talk with Jay and Jenson. "

Jenson, are you getting along well with me?" she said sweetly



"Crazy!" Jenson blurted.

Jay stared at Jenson for a while before realizing that his son's words were directed at Rose. He snuck a glance at Rose who stood by the kitchen sink and was washing the dishes with skill and finesse.

'Is she really the same clumsy oaf I knew five years ago?

'Looks like she has learned to act more like a woman in the past five years.'

Suddenly, he remembered Rose's "Little Lover" and Jay's sexy and charming lips curled into a sneer.

"Do you like her?" Jay could not resist asking.

He was rather flummoxed when he saw how well Rose and Jenson got along.

Jenson shook his head.

Jay nodded in satisfaction.

Jay leaned against the kitchen door again, his willowy body emitting an aura that could not be ignored.

Rose turned to look at him. "Is there something I can help you with, Sir Ares?"

Jay's gloomy eyes eyed the bottom drawers. Every piece of porcelain stored there could be Jenson's worst nightmare. 'If I get Rose to help clean them up, perhaps an unexpected surprise will happen,' he thought.

"Could you help clean the kitchen utensils in the bottom cupboard? I may need them."

Rose responded heartily, "No problem."

A cool look flashed within Jay's eyes. He wondered whether he was in a good mood today, as he felt uncharacteristically generous. "If you're feeling too hungry, there are plenty of Legos over there," he commented offhandedly. "You can play them if you feel it'd make your long day less tedious." With that, he turned and left.

Rose was slightly stunned—

'Play with Legos?'



If I get Rose to help clean them up, perhaps an unexpected surprise will happen,' he thought.

"Could you help clean the kitchen utensils in the bottom cupboard? I may need them."

Rose responded heartily, "No problem."

A cool look flashed within Jay's eyes. He wondered whether he was in a good mood today, as he felt uncharacteristically generous. "If you're feeling too hungry, there are plenty of Legos over there," he commented offhandedly. "You can play them if you feel it'd make your long day less tedious." With that, he turned and left.

Rose was slightly stunned—

'Play with Legos?'

Those words tugged on her heartstrings.

Jay's magnetic voice seemed to have connected with something deep from her memory.



Chapter 17

That year, she was ten years old.

She traveled with Grandpa from Swallow City to the Imperial Capital to visit his good friend, Dylan Ares.

Back then, Jay was already a famous and influential figure in Imperial Capital. He was the amazing, gorgeous, and world-renowned hacker.

When they first met, he dismissed her as just a distant cousin, an outsider. Afraid that the girl would bother him when he was studying, he dug out several boxes of his old Legos, placed them down in front of her, and declared, "These toys should be able to last you for the day. I hope you won't bother me."

However, she finished in no time and when she rushed back to him with the fully assembled Legos, Jay gaped at her in shock. 'Could this little girl build Legos as fast as me?'

He could not prevent his eyes from glancing at the gifted little girl with pure

He could not prevent his eyes from glancing at the gifted little girl with pure and delicate looks. She looked like an otherworldly spirit with her pair of brimming autumn eyes that were as clear as the sea. She looked at Jay and pleaded piteously, "Big brother, can you play with me?"

Jay felt his affection for her double and gently patted her head. "What's your name?" he asked.

He could not be blamed for not remembering his cousin's name. His uncle had many love affairs, both outside and during the Ares Family's many celebrations. The number of women brought over was uncountable. In turn, those women would often bring their illegitimate kids to show off.

However, to Jay's great surprise, he realized he had confused her for someone else when she told him, "My name is Angeline Severe."

For a long time, he was stunned. His beautiful, Greek sculpture-like face

beautiful, Greek sculpture-like face curved into a smile for no reason.

She was the granddaughter of Grandpa Severe from Swallow City who's come by for a visit!

"Big brother, you look really good when you're smiling," she remarked innocently.

Jay had already heard plenty about the ten-year-old girl from listening to the adults heaping praises on her. They always commended her great intelligence and how she would never lose out to a boy. However, Jay did not expect that the smart girl they talked about would look so gentle and cute.

"Will you marry me when you're older?" Jay felt that the words were blurted out of his mouth without him meaning to.

Unexpectedly, she nodded her head furiously.

Her love for him probably started at that moment.



Smash—

Her attention slipped for a moment and the bowl in her hand fell to the ground.

The loud noise yanked Rose back into reality. When she saw the pile of broken ceramic on the ground, she felt like weeping but she had no tears to cry.

"Ah—" she sighed dejectedly. The bowls in the Ares house were expensive.

Jay had the habit of impulsively buying household items. It was most curious that he would do something so trivial. He never cared about the designs or the practicality of the items. The only thing that mattered was that they were the most expensive that money could buy.

The reasoning suited Jay's bossy nature: you get what you pay for.

Moreover, with the father and son's bizarre OCD, they might just decide to dump the entire set of pottery after the breaking of that one piece.

Would Rose have to pay a huge
compensation?

Would Rose have to pay a huge compensation?

Jenson heard the blood-curdling scream from the kitchen and his curiosity prompted him to push open the kitchen door. When he saw the pink ceramic fragments on the ground, Jenson's handsome face was filled with panic.

"Jenson, it was an accident." Rose forced a dry smile.

Jenson rushed over frantically and reached for the broken pieces.

Afraid that the boy might cut his hands, Rose quickly reached out to block him. "Jenson, don't pick it up—"

However, Jenson seemed to have lost his senses. He knocked Rose to the ground and Rose's hand accidentally pressed against the sharp edges of the broken ceramic; she found herself bleeding instantly.

Rose ignored her pain and looked at the deranged child in horror. The child's hysteria scarred her deeply. □

Jenson did not feel the slightest bit of guilt or compassion for Rose's injury. All he cared about was to pick up the broken pieces and take them out of the kitchen as soon as possible.

Still worried about Jenson, Rose immediately ran out after Jenson, not bothering to tend to her injury.

However, Jenson only felt loathing for her at that moment. He picked up the toy blocks on the table and flung them at Rose. "You're a curse, go away."

When the toy blocks struck Rose, she felt so numb that she could not even cry.

Ignoring her, Jenson carefully placed the broken pieces on the table, grabbed a vial super glue, and carefully glued them together.

Even though the fragments were too fine to repair, Jenson still tried his best. In the end, he could not return to its original form.

Jenson started crying and Rose realized that the bowl might have had sentimental

that the bowl might have had sentimental value to Jenson.

"Jenson, can I help you?" she asked tentatively.

"Go—" Jenson tossed the broken bowl in his hand onto the table and glared at Rose. "Go away!"

Rose trembled and her eyes were red. She could not even find it within herself to criticize Jenson for his rudeness.

She felt that if she did not abandon him five years ago, Jenson would not have ended up this way.

However, Rose underestimated Jenson's pettiness when it came to seeking revenge. Jenson seemed to have changed his mind as he abruptly said to her in a cold voice, "Okay. You can help me glue it back."

Rose was delighted to have been given a chance; she would do everything she could to improve Jenson's bad perception of her.



Rose walked over and sat next to Jenson

Rose walked over and sat next to Jenson. When she took the patchwork bowl from Jenson's hand, she realized that there was super glue leaking all over the sides. The moment she touched the bowl, it was stuck to her hand.

Rose stared at Jenson in shock. "Help get this off me."

Jenson gritted his teeth and snarled, "This is the punishment you deserve."

Rose observed the seething hatred that should never belong in a kid's eyes. Her tone became stern and she said, "Jenson, it's just a bowl, you're—"

"That's the bowl my mom used!" Jenson shouted hysterically.

Then, Jenson ran away.

Rose was dumbfounded!

Hot liquid seeped out of her eyes. Rose slid weakly to the ground. She held up her free hand and slapped herself fiercely.

She was the one who made Jenson what he was today.

‘You reap what you sow!’

After crying for a while, she pulled herself together. After a long struggle, Rose managed to dissolve and remove the super glue.

When she looked at the poorly mended bowl, she found the special letter carved on the bottom of the bowl: a “C”!

Hot tears brimmed in Rose’s eye. That was the same bowl she bought years ago and the C stood for “Care”. During their marriage, Jay was very alienated from her and showed her no love. She engraved the letter on the bottom of the special bowl to remind herself how important he was to her.

It became her source of strength when she had to endure all his coldblooded abuse.

Little did she know, her son Jenson had turned it into his personal treasure.

Jenson had not seen his Mommy since he was a baby so he constantly longed for her. His desire was like a budding seed. As

It became her source of strength when she had to endure all his coldblooded abuse.

Little did she know, her son Jenson had turned it into his personal treasure.

Jenson had not seen his Mommy since he was a baby so he constantly longed for her. His desire was like a budding seed. As time passed, it germinated and eventually grew into a towering tree.

He missed her so much it became a disease!

Tears hung on Rose's face, but her warm smile bloomed like a flower.

'It's okay, Jenson. Mommy's back.'

Rose cleaned up the mess and went to Jenson's door. With her healing voice mixed with tears, she gently read some poems for children.

'From today onward, your Mommy's love is back.'



Chapter 18

In the evening, Jay returned.

Rose sat on the sofa with her swollen face and greenish nose while she held a book of poems in her hands. There was thick gauze wrapped around her right hand. She stared bitterly at Jay.

"It seems you've given it a lot of thought when you asked me to clean the pottery in the bottom cabinets," Rose said accusingly.

Jay casually walked over to her, took off the well-cut handmade blazer, removed his black tie, and gazed at the tiny woman on the sofa.

"What's with that look? Are you trying to blackmail me for money?" The sexy and charming lips just had to spew unpleasant words again.

Rose's complexion was very pale. It seemed like a little knock would easily bruise her.



With Jenson having pulled away from her with such intensity in addition to him hurling toy blocks at her face, one could only imagine how embarrassed she was right now.

Rose stood up immediately, raised her chin, and looked at Jay. She flipped her middle finger, and growled, "Sir Ares, if you want to take revenge on me, feel free. But please at least use your brain when you're doing it. Don't involve innocent children."

Jay's pupils dilated—

He suddenly grabbed her tiny hand; Rose gasped in pain.

Jay pushed her middle finger down and he said in his cold and bossy manner, "I've always wanted to clear out the garbage in the bottom cabinets. But as you know, I have OCD, so please throw them away when you leave."

Rose's chest burned with fury, and she raged, "Sure, if that's what you want, but what about Jenson? Have you ever

considered his feelings?"

what about Jenson? Have you ever considered his feelings?"

Jay lowered his voice so that only the two of them could hear it. In an equally fierce voice, he hissed, "Did you consider his feelings when you abandoned him?"

Rose slumped her body weakly onto the sofa, Jay's reprimand instantly made her ashamed and embarrassed. At that moment, all she wanted to do was hide under a rock.

"I was wrong." She raised her head and fixed her eyes on him, tears glistening. "If I knew that it would cause him so much pain, I would have never left him here and raised him myself even if I had to beg for a living!"

Jay stared at the woman's pretentious face, and there was disgust in his eyes. "Get out!"

Rose grabbed her handbag from the sofa and ran out in shame.

Jay let his body plunge into the sofa.

Although he got his revenge on Rose, he

Although he got his revenge on Rose, he did not feel even the slightest feeling of happiness when he saw how embarrassed she looked.

Rose was right. In order to take his revenge on her, he involved the innocent Jenson. How could he be happy if he hurt his son?

Jay suddenly realized his all-powerful self had no way to get back at Rose. Jay hurt the mother of his son and, in turn, hurt Jenson.

Jay went to Jenson's room upstairs. When he was just about to knock on Jenson's door, the door suddenly swung open.

Jenson's expression was very calm which surprised Jay a little. In the past, it was hard to calm Jenson down when he went berserk. At times, Jay had to use medicine to calm him down.

"Jenson, if you don't like her, Daddy will tell her not to come tomorrow." Jay patted Jenson's head.

Jenson said flatly, "You decide." □

Jenson said flatly, "You decide."

Jay was a little stunned. Jenson did not seem to be as repulsed by Rose as he expected.

'That's weird. Whenever strangers come to the house, Jenson never liked any of them. There was also an unpleasant incident between them today. Shouldn't Jenson be utterly disgusted by her?'

"The poems she read were not bad."
Jenson suddenly said.

Jay's handsome face was petrified.

"Are you complimenting her?"

"I'm just stating the facts!"

"Read it for me!" Jay was curious; his son had never taken any interest in literature, yet he suddenly acknowledged the beauty of poetry.

Jenson hesitated.

Although the poetry was very beautiful, he would never read such an emotional poem aloud even if it killed him.

Jay knew how stubborn Jenson was and he would not be able to force him to do anything.

"Fine, forget about it." He went back to his study office.

...

Even though Rose hurried to the kindergarten, she was still two hours late.

Robbie and Zetty stayed back in the teacher's office and were chatting enthusiastically with their teacher.

"Teacher, why hasn't our mommy come yet? Can you give her a call and remind her that she left her two babies in kindergarten?" Robbie said.

The angelic baby Zetty immediately defended her Mommy. "Robbie, Mommy's busy at work. Don't worry."

Even though the teachers only met them for the first time, they had already fallen in love with the two baby angels. They were so cute and talkative.



A teacher could not help but tease them, "You two don't look alike, are you guys really twins?"

"Of course. It's because I inherited all of Mommy's good points and Robbie got all of Mommy's bad points. That's why we look different." Zetty repeated what she once heard Mommy said.

Robbie immediately refuted his sister's statement. "Nonsense. It's because one of us looks like Daddy and the other one looks like Mommy."

Zetty pouted, "I don't want to be like Daddy. I want to be as beautiful as Mommy."

"You can rest assured, your wishes have come true," Robbie mumbled.

The teachers were amused by the kid's cuteness and laughed as they clutched their stomachs.

When Rose finally arrived, a teacher told her reproachfully, "I know you're busy with work, but sending your kids off so early and picking them up this late after

early and picking them up this late after school will be bad for their growth. Please take note of that from tomorrow onward."

Rose nodded.

However, she was worried. What should she do tomorrow?

She brought the kids back home with a heavy heart while Robbie and Zetty stood in front of her like the guardian angels.

"Mommy, please tell me the truth. How did you get hurt?" Robbie interrogated Rose with a straight face.

"Mommy's eyes are as red as a rabbit's. Mommy's been crying!" Zetty gasped.

Rose looked at the two cuties that cared so much about her. However, she could not bring herself to tell them how horrible she was feeling.

They loved her because she had devoted herself to love them for the past five years. Their love was mutual.

However, Jenson was not as fortunate.



They loved her because she had devoted herself to love them for the past five years. Their love was mutual.

However, Jenson was not as fortunate.

"Mommy's all right," Rose said cheerfully.

The two children gave her a soft hug. "Mommy, you can do it," they whispered.

That night, Zetty suddenly caught a serious fever. Rose had to take her daughter to a nearby hospital in the middle of the night for emergency treatment.

The world was vast and strange coincidences were nothing to be surprised at.

The doctor in the emergency department turned out to be her half-sister, Sydney.

Although both Rose and Sydney were daughters of the Loyle Family, they had always been treated differently at home.



Chapter 19

After Rose's dad divorced her mother, he married the woman who was Sydney's mother.

Even though it looked like a typical remarriage, Sydney was only two years younger than Rose.

When Rose's dad divorced his ex-wife, Rose was five years old. From that perspective, it seemed more likely that Rose's dad cheated on her mom while they were married.

At that time, Rose's mother lived in a remote rural area and did not know how to defend herself in the divorce court.

When Rose was fifteen, her mother worked so hard to the point where she fell ill. Her worst fear was that no one would take care of her daughter if she died. Out of options, she had her daughter embark on a long journey to the city to search for her relatives.

However, her father introduced Rose, his own flesh and blood, to everyone as an

own flesh and blood, to everyone as an illegitimate daughter.

From that day, although Rose moved in with the Loyle Family, she lived a miserable, lowly life.

Both Sydney and her mother would often humiliate Rose for coming from a lower background. It was common for them to scold and beat Rose when her dad was not at home. Once, Rose could not stop herself and talked back. As a result, her stepmother and half-sister stripped off her clothes and shut her in the bathroom all night.

That day caused Rose to suffer severe depression.

The only thing that made her pull through in life was when Rose found out that her biological mother, Harper, was suffering from uremia. Harper went to the city searching for Rose to borrow money to see a doctor.

Rose had no money to lend her.

When Harper saw her daughter dressed

When Harper saw her daughter dressed in fancy clothes, she thought Rose had assimilated well with her new family and home. Harper assumed Rose had also received the mindset of the city folk who loved wealth and hated the poor. At that moment, Harper was furious and she berated Rose, telling her that she was an ungrateful and vicious person.

Following that, Rose plucked up the courage to ask her father for money. Her request was refused.

His father's unkind words became the last straw that broke the camel's back.

"Rose, I've already done more than enough for you. Don't be greedy. Don't try to exploit any more from me. People must learn to be content."

That day, when Rose was abandoned by her own parents, she felt suicidal for the first time.

She walked aimlessly on the street and saw a red car approaching. She suddenly lost control and threw herself at the car.



When she woke up, she was Angeline.

...

"Mommy!"

The child in her arms squealed softly.

Rose pulled herself back from her erratic thoughts and walked toward Sydney with Zetty in her arms.

There were only a few patients in the emergency department at that late hour.

Sydney saw Rose as well, but when she observed the child in her arms, Sydney was taken by surprise and said mockingly, "Rose, whose child is this?"

Sydney had a calculated look in her eyes that made Rose frown. Rose replied coolly, "I didn't know doctors asked their patients so many questions nowadays. Do patients need to register their entire household before getting treatment?"

Sydney choked a little and was speechless.

She was secretly surprised. 'I haven't seen her for five years and she's now got

seen her for five years and she's now got a sharp tongue?'

Sydney patted the table in front of her, pompously gesturing for Rose to sit down. She slowly took out her stethoscope and auscultated the child's heart and lungs.

Sydney noted the concern in Rose's eyes and felt sure that the child was Rose's.

"Rose, who's the father of the child?"

"Dead," Rose said shortly.

"Your kid's cute, how old is she?"

"Four years old."

Rose knew that Sydney had no good intentions so she did not tell the truth.

After the examination, Sydney diagnosed Zetty with tonsillitis and stated that she would need infusion treatment.

Rose had to carry Zetty into the infusion room.

Time ticked away...



Soon, the sky in the east turned as white as a fish's belly.

Rose checked the time on her phone. The long infusion tube dropped little by little like an hourglass, making Rose anxious.

She sorely wished that she could break her body into three parts. One for Zetty, one for Robbie, and one for Jenson.

Despite the tormenting process, Rose maintained her optimism. She did not want to give up her hope to visit Jenson in Horizon Colors until the last minute.

At seven-thirty, Rose whipped out her cell phone and was prepared to inform Jay that she might be late. However, her phone was out of battery.

Rose borrowed the nurse's cell phone and dialed his number but Jay adamantly refused to pick up.

Horizon Colors.

Jay watched Jenson from the sofa with his arms crossed and Jenson's small kindergarten backpack next to him.

Jay asked uncertainly, "Are you really sure you want to go to kindergarten?"

Jenson nodded.

Jay raised his wrist and looked at his limited edition diamond watch. He furrowed his brows. He had a very urgent meeting today but Rose had not reached his house even though it was nearing eight o'clock.

He called her but the line indicated that her phone was turned off.

Jay's handsome and sculpted face was layered in ice. 'If that woman wanted to quit, she should've let me know in advance.

'What's this supposed to mean?

'Spend a day with Jenson and leave?'

He now felt sure that she had no consciousness of being a mother.

"Jenson, Daddy has an urgent meeting soon. I'll get Miss Nancy to send you to kindergarten. Is that okay?"



Jenson noted Daddy's frown and nodded reluctantly.

Jay was relieved.

After an hour.

Nancy Bell arrived at their house. As usual, she had that otherworldly beauty that could make an entire city swoon over her.

She had skin as white as snow, jet black hair that was straight and long, as well as delicate facial features. She looked gentle, charming, and dainty.

She took the key from her pink limited edition handbag and gently twisted the door handle. The door opened. She stood by the door and called out sweetly to Jenson, "Jenson, Miss Nancy is here to pick you up for school. Let's go!"

Jenson looked at her indifferently, grabbed his schoolbag, and reluctantly walked toward her.

Nancy opened the rear seat door for Jenson. After Jenson entered the car, she

Jenson. After Jenson entered the car, she sat in the passenger seat and instructed the female driver, "Let's go!"

Jenson's gaze fell on the sidewalk through the car window.

"Jenson, you have to behave when you're in kindergarten," Nancy advised him, as though she was his mother. "You can't fight with your classmates, alright?"

Jenson ignored her and his face looked even more detached. He was not a troublemaker. If it were not for those classmates that provoked him first, he would not have fought with them.

"Why are you so rude? Miss Nancy is talking to you," Nancy said angrily when Jenson did not respond.

Jenson remained silent.

"I'll be your mommy soon. Jenson, you have to be more polite to me," Nancy said sullenly.

At that moment, Jenson flew into a rage.

He thumped his fist on the window glass

have to be more polite to me," Nancy said sullenly.

At that moment, Jenson flew into a rage.

He thumped his fist on the window glass and said angrily, "I want to get off."

Nancy panicked, "Jenson, why are you acting like this? Your daddy told me to send you to kindergarten."

"I'm not going," Jenson said bluntly.

Nancy chose to ignore Jenson's emotional outbreak and said to the driver, "Ignore him, continue heading to the school."

When they arrived at the school gate, Jenson jumped down with his school bag as soon as the car stopped.

At that moment, the irate Jenson raging around the crowded entrance looked like a small, ferocious wolfhound.

When one of his classmates saw him, he shouted to his mother, "Mom, look! That's the troublesome kid in our class!"



Chapter 20

Jenson stopped in his tracks and glared at the kid who was badmouthing him.

The mature and powerful look in Jenson's eyes was that of an adult's, his eyes ready to kill.

The timid child was frightened, instantly hiding in his mother's arms.

When the parent saw the source of her child's fear, she yelled at Jenson, "What are you staring at? Has your mommy never taught you that staring at people is rude?"

The assistant felt sorry for Jenson and stepped forward to bail him out.

Nancy pulled her back and said, "That child's ego is too big. It'll be a good thing to let him learn something. Otherwise, his temper won't change. If he stays that way, I'll have a tough time when I marry into the Ares Family."



Jenson especially hated people saying bad things about his mommy; that kid's mother had stepped on a landmine.

"Don't you dare talk about my mommy!" Jenson snarled, rushing like a manic little wolf toward the woman who had spoken.

"Is this kid crazy? Who's his parent? Can't you take care of their own child?" The woman grabbed Jenson's hands to protect herself from his attacks.

When no one responded, she roughly shoved Jenson to the ground. His head struck the stone pillar next to him and was immediately bruised.

When Nancy saw what happened, she was scared. If something were to happen to Jenson, Jay would never forgive her.

She finally got out of the car and hurried toward Jenson.

People around pointed at her and murmured, "What sort of mother is she?"

Nancy was thin-skinned and was not used to such humiliation. Annoyed, she

used to such humiliation. Annoyed, she vented her anger on the child. "Jenson, come back now. How disgraceful."

With that, Nancy stuffed Jenson back into the car and sent him straight back to Horizon Colors.

Meanwhile, Rose had been at Horizon Colors for some time now. As she could not see Jenson or anyone else in the villa, she was reluctant to leave and chose to wait outside.

Nancy's car parked next to Rose's car. Rose slid her window down a little and heard Nancy's raised voice scolding Jenson. "If people say that you're lacking common courtesy, you should reflect on your mistakes! What's with that attitude? You acted just like a lunatic just now! You have no manners at all!"

Rose peered at Jenson in the car. The child had his head bowed, his handsome face looked unhappy, and there was a bleeding bruise on his forehead.

Jenson stepped out of the car sullenly and Nancy registered Rose's presence with

Jenson stepped out of the car sullenly and Nancy registered Rose's presence with some surprise. She asked contemptuously, "Are you Jenson's nanny?"

Rose nodded.

Nancy's suspicious eyes scanned Rose's entire body up and down. She raised her chin and said haughtily, "Where did Jay find this nanny? She's a pretty little thing, huh!"

Rose ignored her comment and hurried over to Jenson. "Jens, how did you get hurt?"

Compared to Nancy's high-pitched screech, Rose's voice was as soft as the springtime breeze, and worry flooded her eyes.

Jenson did not reply and kicked the marble tiles under his feet with annoyance.

Nancy went over to them and said bitterly, "Someone's parent criticized him for his lack of manners so he rushed

him for his lack of manners so he rushed to pick a fight and ended up this way..."

When Rose heard what happened, she looked at Nancy angrily. 'How can this woman act like it's none of her business when Jenson got beaten up this badly? Why did Jay get such a cold-hearted person to send Jenson to school?'

Rose could not be more annoyed. "How dare she scold my little Jens. She's the one with no manners. Jens, bring me to her, I'll get justice for you."

Jenson was taken aback.

Whenever this sort of thing happened in the past, Daddy always called the teachers to take care of it.

In the end, the outcome was neither good nor bad. The teacher would criticize the students and they would never play with him again. They even gave him a nickname behind his back. They called him the Lawsuit Boy!

For some reason, Jenson found himself nodding and agreeing to the suggestion

nodding and agreeing to the suggestion after he gave it some thought.

Rose carried Jenson into the rear seat. She faced Nancy directly and said offhandedly, "Give us a ride, please."

Nancy was dumbfounded.

The babysitter that Jay hired was ordering her around?

Nancy found the babysitter rather unusual.

Nevertheless, she was curious as to what the woman planned to do.

'Hmph! How dare she kiss up to Jenson. Does she know who she is? If anything goes wrong, I'll pin everything on her!'

"Drive!" Nancy sat down in the passenger seat and barked at the assistant.

Ten minutes later.

The car arrived at the school entrance.

Rose took Jenson's little hand and walked into the school imposingly. It just so happened that the woman who shoved

happened that the woman who shoved Jenson was on her way out of the school.

"It's her." Jenson stared angrily at the woman.

Rose spread out her arms to block the oncoming woman.

The woman was caught off guard when she saw Rose's furious face.

However, when she saw Jenson standing beside her, the pieces fell in place. The air felt thick and tense. She sighed dramatically, "Oh, no. This motherless child is so pitiful. I can't believe a different woman has to pick him up and drop him off every day."

This statement clearly insulted Jay's unethical style.

Rose raised her hand directly and slapped the woman swiftly.

"How dare you!" The woman shouted angrily, her blood boiling.

Rose defended her little calf, "So what? You're the one who ran your mouth. How

Rose defended her little call, "So what? You're the one who ran your mouth. How can you say such things to a child? Where are your manners?"

The woman pushed her Louis Vuitton bag forward and noted Rose's cheap attire with contempt. "I don't care about poor people like you," she sniffed. "I know that you're less educated. Since I'm the bigger person, I'll forgive you."

Rose sneered. "A Louis Vuitton bag that you can buy anywhere? Oh, please, that doesn't mean anything!"

The woman was caught off guard, she did not expect the woman who wore such cheap clothes to be astute enough to tell that her Louis Vuitton bag was just a common edition. Instantly, her face flushed with embarrassment.

"It's better than your raggedy clothes..." she mumbled. Before she could finish, Rose suddenly pulled out her own necklace from the inside of her collar. When she opened her swan lock, there was a rare gem—an Angel Tear!



The woman was dumbfounded and looked at Rose in shock.

Nancy stared at the deflated woman and walked over to them suspiciously. Rose quickly stashed away the Angel Tear and the black swan necklace hung from her fair neck.

"I've had enough of you—" When she saw how imposing and threatening Rose was being, the woman tried to leave.

However, Rose was not going to let her go that easily. "Apologize to the child," she said. "Otherwise, I won't let you go."

The woman could not let go of her ego and argued back with annoyance, "Your child was rude to my son first! Why should I apologize?"

Rose glanced at the silent Jenson beside her and said,

"If Jenson was indeed rude to your child, Jens should apologize to your son. But you are an adult who bullied a kid and hurt my Jens, so you must apologize to him. Otherwise, I will sue you for child

Nancy stared at the deflated woman and walked over to them suspiciously. Rose quickly stashed away the Angel Tear and the black swan necklace hung from her fair neck.

"I've had enough of you—" When she saw how imposing and threatening Rose was being, the woman tried to leave.

However, Rose was not going to let her go that easily. "Apologize to the child," she said. "Otherwise, I won't let you go."

The woman could not let go of her ego and argued back with annoyance, "Your child was rude to my son first! Why should I apologize?"

Rose glanced at the silent Jenson beside her and said,

"If Jenson was indeed rude to your child, Jens should apologize to your son. But you are an adult who bullied a kid and hurt my Jens, so you must apologize to him. Otherwise, I will sue you for child abuse!"



Chapter 21

One after another, the onlookers began condemning the woman. "Exactly. You're an adult, how could you bully a kid?"

Seeing that the situation was escalating, the woman hastily whispered to Jenson with her beet-red face, "I'm sorry."

Jenson said coolly, "No more scolding my mommy."

Rose looked at Jenson and her eyes became moist.

In Jenson's heart, Mommy was a divine existence. She owed the child too much.

The woman quickly nodded and fled the scene.

The matter was resolved. Rose held Jenson's shoulders and asked softly, "Jens, can I send you into the classroom?"

Jenson looked at the school entrance and his steps slowed down significantly.

There was a lot of reluctance in his eyes.



Rose embraced Jenson in her arms.

‘The child is clearly afraid of going to kindergarten, so why should he be forced to? Perhaps something bad happened before that made Jenson uncomfortable to be here.’

Rose gently asked, "Jenson, you don't want to go to kindergarten?"

Jenson nodded curtly.

Rose suggested, "Then why don't I take you to the amusement park?"

Jenson's handsome face looked a little wary.

It was true that he did not like going to kindergarten but he was equally reluctant to get along with strangers.

Rose was not yet considered a proper acquaintance!

However, when he saw how sincerely Rose was treating him, Jenson lowered his guard and nodded.

Rose lifted Jenson and whooped, "We're

Rose lifted Jenson and whooped, "We're going to the amusement park!"

"No! You can't take Jenson away, he should go to school." Nancy suddenly obstructed Rose and angrily reached out to grab Jenson.

Jay asked her to send Jenson to the kindergarten and that was what she had to do.

Rose was so focused on Jenson that she had been paying very little attention to Nancy. She turned to look at her properly.

Although Nancy wore office clothing with a white blouse and black skirt, her natural beauty showed through despite the common garments.

She looked fairly open, intellectual, and elegant.

"Who are you?" Rose only just thought of asking who the woman was.

Nancy raised his chin and said, "My name is Nancy and Jay is my fiance. I'll be Jenson's stepmother soon!"

Rose was stunned!

‘This is Jay’s type?’

‘She looks smart, but maybe that's not a great thing. She only cares about pleasing Jay and was neglecting Jenson.

‘The more she goes against Jenson, the more Jenson will hate her. Without Jenson's approval, Jay’s marriage will be indefinite.

‘She should know that the Ares Family takes its next-generation very seriously.’

Rose kindly reminded her, "Since you're going to be Jenson's stepmother, you should learn how to make the child happy."

Nancy huffed, "You're just the nanny. You have no right to point fingers at me!"

"I'm giving you advice with the best intentions. If you don't get the kid's approval, Sir Ares won't marry you." Rose said calmly.

Nancy stared at Rose. Rose exuded an aura like an orchid that did not need soil

Nancy stared at Rose. Rose exuded an aura like an orchid that did not need soil to grow.

‘Is this type of woman that gets men excited?’

Nancy was inexplicably hostile to Rose. "You seem to know Jay very well. Could it be that you have feelings for him?"

Rose felt her heart freeze up in that instant.

It had been a long time since she last thought about her love for Jay. Was it sealed deep inside her heart or had it corroded into hatred from his repeated abuse?

"You can rest assured that I'd marry a chicken or dog before him," Rose said firmly.

He was the unreachable moon and the stars while she was just a shadow in the ditch. A union between them would never be.

Nancy felt rather relieved. 'At least this woman knows her place.' she thought

Nancy felt rather relieved. 'At least this woman knows her place,' she thought. Glancing at the expressionless Jenson, she said with a voice of authority, "Jay asked me to send Jenson to school so I'm afraid he'll have to stay here."

Jenson's body trembled in Rose's arms.

Rose could feel the child's resistance and anxiety. She said crossly, "Miss Nancy, no one is allowed to force him to do things he doesn't like as long as I'm around."

With that said, Rose took Jenson away.

Annoyed, Nancy hurried to call Jay. When the line was connected, Nancy immediately complained, "Jay, the nanny you hired is a damn shrew!"

Jay's eyes narrowed coldly. "What happened?"

"She had a quarrel with one of the student's parents and it got ugly. I tried to advise her but she told me off and even forced Jenson out of school to play."

Jay's handsome face darkened instantly. Rose's sense of inferiority as an illegitimate girl from the countryside seemed to be deeply ingrained in her. Jenson would inevitably be adversely affected by her influence. Right then, Jay felt that hiring Rose into the house might have been a big mistake.

...

City South's largest amusement park was Happy Valley.

Just as Rose purchased Jenson's entrance ticket, she got a call from Jay.

"Rose, immediately send Jenson back to the kindergarten. Right now." Jay's spat the order from over the phone.

Rose looked at Jenson and saw that the kid's eyes were filled with longing and joy. Rose gritted her teeth and hung up the phone.

When Jay realized she hung up on him, his beautiful face froze into a block of ice.



He called Rose again. When she picked up, she answered with fake innocence, "Sir Ares—I'm so sorry, the line's poor here. What did you say—Huh? I can't hear you. I'll return your call when we're back." She cut the phone off without hesitation.

Jay, "..."

Did she just pretend that the call was breaking up before he could get a word in?

When he tried to call her again, her phone was apparently turned off.

Jay was so mad that he choked, "Rose..." he growled.

Meanwhile, when Jenson stepped foot into Happy Valley, he looked amazed. His daddy was almost always busy. During the rare free time they had, the father and son would often stay at home to build Legos, learn programming, or play esports.

Rose took Jenson on the pirate ship ride, the merry go round, the bumper cars, surfing, and even the haunted house...

surfing, and even the haunted house... then shooting games...

After they were done going through nearly all of the attractions in the amusement park, Rose finally brought Jenson home with their arms full of prizes.

Jay sat on the sofa with a stony face and waited for them. When Rose and Jenson walked in and stood before him, they bowed their heads like kids caught doing something wrong.

Jay reached out and patted Jenson's little head, directing whatever little good temper he had left to his son.

"Jens, go upstairs and take a shower. Daddy has prepared the bath for you," he said curtly.

Jenson shot Rose a tentative look and said to her unexpectedly, "Good luck."

Then, he went upstairs.

As soon as Jenson left, Jay's handsome face dropped the calm facade and became annoyed. "Rose, you won't be coming in

nearly all of the attractions in the amusement park, Rose finally brought Jenson home with their arms full of prizes.

Jay sat on the sofa with a stony face and waited for them. When Rose and Jenson walked in and stood before him, they bowed their heads like kids caught doing something wrong.

Jay reached out and patted Jenson's little head, directing whatever little good temper he had left to his son.

"Jens, go upstairs and take a shower. Daddy has prepared the bath for you," he said curtly.

Jenson shot Rose a tentative look and said to her unexpectedly, "Good luck."

Then, he went upstairs.

As soon as Jenson left, Jay's handsome face dropped the calm facade and became annoyed. "Rose, you won't be coming in tomorrow," he said coldly.



Chapter 22

"Why not?" Rose asked immediately.

"Quarreling with a classmate's parent and making the child skip school... And you still have the nerve to ask?" Jay gnashed his teeth, his anger that he was bottling up for the entire day was finally being vented.

Rose's temper was also rising.

It seemed that the sneaky Nancy must have snitched on her actions.

Rose's face curled into a sneer. "Sir Ares, do you even know why I confronted that parent? Why I took Jenson out of school? It was because—"

Jay interrupted her coolly, "I don't need to know why. What you've done was enough to show me how immature and retarded you are!"

Rose retorted immediately, "I faced that foul parent because she hurt Jenson and criticized the way you raised him. Do you know how badly that could affect Jenson?"

"Sir Ares, you have no right to criticize me before investigating what had happened first."

Jay looked at Rose's adamant look and raised his eyebrows. After not seeing her for five years, her stupid mouth seemed to have become more intelligent and the things she said were somewhat logical.

"So what's the excuse for skipping school?"

Rose's face darkened.

"Jenson doesn't like going to kindergarten," she whispered, a look of pain in her eyes.

Jay stood up and his big, tall body instantly shrouded her in his shadow. "A failed son stems from an overbearing mother," he said severely.

Rose raised her sparkling bright eyes and tried to reason with Jay.

"Sir Ares, transfer Jenson to another school! Jenson is very resistant to going to that kindergarten. The children and

to that kindergarten. The children and parents there don't accept him well. This kind of environment won't be conducive to Jenson's mental growth!"

Before Rose could finish what she wanted to say, Jay took a step forward, his 185cm from towering over the petite and lowly Rose.

He looked down at Rose like a mighty lord, contempt in his eyes.

"Rose, you have no right to tell what to do. My Jenson is not someone like you, one who runs and hides at the first sight of trouble. I've always taught him how to deal with difficulties."

Rose said imploringly, "Mencius's mother moved three times so that her kid could have a good environment for education. Sir Ares, you should emulate Mencius's mother..."

"Rose!"

Jay roughly cut her off. "If you really understand how important the environment affects someone, then set

environment affects someone, then set an example for Jenson. If you're late again tomorrow, don't bother coming in." Jay finished his sentence and went upstairs.

"Sir Ares, I... I promise not to be late." All of Rose's stubbornness went out the window instantly.

Rose sighed helplessly as she looked at his back leaving firmly as if he was a king dominating her.

"And..." Jay hissed, standing on the stairs on the second floor, looking down at Rose, "You're not allowed to hang up my call in the future."

Rose answered weakly, "Got it."

Jay turned and left.

Rose raised her wrist and checked the time. Zetty and Robbie had long been let out of kindergarten.

Zetty's fever got better after the infusion in the morning but the doctor said that there was a risk of it returning. □

Rose was in no mood to argue with Jay at that moment so she quickly left the villa.

She rushed to the kindergarten anxiously and was again criticized by the kindergarten teacher for being late. Rose nodded, promised not to be late again, and bowed profusely before she took the two kids out of the kindergarten.

"Mommy, is it true that you don't love me anymore?"

Zetty was lying listlessly against Mommy's shoulders. She was still sick and her body felt uncomfortable. Normally, Mommy would not send her to kindergarten if she was unwell nor would she be late to pick them up.

Rose's eyes turned red, grasping Zetty in one hand and Robbie in the other. Feeling guilty, she whispered, "Mommy loves you, baby. Mommy loves you very very much."

Robbie looked at Mommy's tired face and felt heartbroken. He asked, "Mommy, is the new job tiring? Can you change to an easier one if Zetty and I stop having

easier one if Zetty and I stop having expensive new clothes, hobby classes, and expensive snacks?

Rose squeezed Robbie's face with a smile. "Mommy's not tired. It was hard for me to get this job so Mommy has to stick to it. You guys can cheer for Mommy, okay?"

Robbie looked at Mommy who had tears in her eyes. 'Yeah right, as if I'd believe that. Mommy looks embarrassed and sad. She must have got a tough task so she couldn't leave work.'

Rose took the children home. She had been exhausted even before taking Zetty to the hospital for infusion.

After tossing and turning the entire night, she barely got a wink of sleep.

Fortunately, Zetty's fever did not return.

At dawn, Rose was so sleepy that she slept until half-past seven.

As soon as she opened his eyes, Jay's ruthless warning sounded in her head. 'If you're late again tomorrow, don't bother coming in.'

coming in.'

Rose quickly got up and packed everything as quickly as possible.

However, time was running out. If she sent Robbie and Zetty to kindergarten, she would definitely be late.

Robbie seemed to read Mommy's thoughts. He went into the room carrying Mommy's handbag and said, "Mommy, go to work quickly, Zetty and I already know the way to school. We can go by ourselves."

Rose hesitated. Robbie took out his smartwatch and Mommy's mobile phone. He turned both of them on and showed the shared location tracking system. "

Mommy, you can know where Zetty and I are anytime, anywhere."

Rose felt terribly bad but since Zetty and Robbie's kindergarten was close by and they had location tracking, she gritted her teeth and agreed with Robbie's suggestion. "Then please be careful on the way. Remember to tell Mommy when you get to the kindergarten safely."

Robbie and Zetty nodded obediently.

Rose took her handbag and ran out of the door.

After Mommy left, the two smarty pants immediately turned on the computer. It turned out that when Mommy was not paying attention, they secretly synchronized Mommy's mobile phone tracking system to the computer so that they could track Mommy's whereabouts.

"Quick, look! Mommy went to the Horizon Colors villa area." Zetty pointed to the little red dot on the Baidu Maps and shouted excitedly.

Robbie's obsidian-like eyes gleamed sharply.

Robbie said, "Zetty, take my watch to kindergarten later so Mommy won't worry. I'll sneak into Horizon Colors to talk to Mommy's boss so that he'll stop giving Mommy so much work every day."

"Okay. Good luck!" Zetty cheered.

The little girl's illness seemed to have

disappeared faster than it came; she was

After Mommy left, the two smarty pants immediately turned on the computer. It turned out that when Mommy was not paying attention, they secretly synchronized Mommy's mobile phone tracking system to the computer so that they could track Mommy's whereabouts.

"Quick, look! Mommy went to the Horizon Colors villa area." Zetty pointed to the little red dot on the Baidu Maps and shouted excitedly.

Robbie's obsidian-like eyes gleamed sharply.

Robbie said, "Zetty, take my watch to kindergarten later so Mommy won't worry. I'll sneak into Horizon Colors to talk to Mommy's boss so that he'll stop giving Mommy so much work every day."

"Okay. Good luck!" Zetty cheered.

The little girl's illness seemed to have disappeared faster than it came; she was suddenly full of energy.



Chapter 23

Although Rose rushed straight to Horizon Colors, the congested road and the short time window caused her to be late again.

Jay stood on the garden balcony on the second floor of the villa and stared at Rose rushing in. A sneer appeared on his cold face.

"Miss Rose, you're late again."

Rose heard the chilling sound coming from above her head and her soul almost left her body from fright. When she looked up to see Jay, she was greeted by that accursed smile of his.

She panted and tried to catch her breath. All she could muster after a desperate sprint was a string of broken words. "Sir — Ares — The road — Driving..." After a few words, she began to breathe heavily.

'Sir Ares the road driving, huh? What a fascinating sentence.'

Jay's handsome face turned as dark as coal.



"Can you speak properly?" he hissed.

Still catching her breath, Rose gasped, "Sir Ares— — There were too many cars on the road— — That's why— — I'm— — late."

Jay's handsome face turned icy and he turned to head downstairs.

After a few minutes.

Jay sat on the sofa and his long, slender legs were crossed as he stared at Rose.

"Since you're late, what do you think I should do with you?"

Rose vividly remembered the warning he gave her yesterday. If she was late again, she did not have to bother going to work in the future.

If Rose met a foul boss like him at another job, she would have quit the job as fast as possible.

However, this job was different. She had to make up for the years she denied Jenson. She would rather die than lose her job.



She was not afraid of death and shame was something she expected.

At this moment, Rose said boldly, "Sir Ares, it's my fault."

Jay sneered. "If simple apologies worked, what's the point of the law?"

"Sir Ares, since I'm thirty minutes late, you can increase my working time for free. I won't complain."

Jay's lips twitched. "Increase your working time? Isn't that just what you'd want?"

"You can also not pay me!"

...

Meanwhile, outside the villa.

A small figure walked carefully around the dense and thorny garden.

After circling almost the entirety of the villa, he still could not find the entrance. In the end, he slid into the basement via the garage entrance.

In the basement, there was an elevator that went directly to the third floor of the villa.

However, the elevator doors could only be unlocked with a fingerprint scan. He put his tiny hand over the lock and infrared rays scanned his fingerprint.

Immediately, the elevator door popped open.

Baby Robbie was dumbfounded.

He looked at his little hand and exclaimed, "Woah, did God give me a pair of universal fingerprint unlocking hands?"

After entering the elevator, Baby Robbie chose the second floor as he did not like odd numbers.

When he exited, he found himself in a beautiful roof garden. The garden was surrounded by three walls and had a strong feeling of privacy.

Baby Robbie was attracted by the bright and colorful flowers and plants in the garden as well as the weird playground

and colorful flowers and plants in the garden as well as the weird playground equipment. It was something he had never seen in a public playground.

The super long and twisting slide looked especially fun. Robbie could not resist the temptation. He climbed up the slide and slid down the twisting chute.

"Who are you?" a cold voice suddenly said.

Baby Robbie was so frightened that he lost control and tumbled to the ground as soon as he landed and his little butt plopped on the green lawn.

He looked up in front of him but saw nobody.

He turned to look behind him and yelped the moment he saw Jenson.

"Ah!"

When Jenson saw Baby Robbie, his stern handsome face looked confused.

Baby Robbie walked over and instinctively reached his hand out to

instinctively reached his hand out to touch Jenson's face and the clothes on him. His first reaction was to mutter, "Is this a mirror?"

However, Robbie could feel the person in front of him and realized it was no mirror. He only said that because he noticed that the boy who looked exactly like him was wearing different clothes.

"Who are you?" Baby Robbie asked Jenson curiously.

Jenson asked back, "This is my home. I should be asking you this question."

Baby Robbie openly said, "My name is Robert. What about you?"

"Jenson," he replied coldly.

The two children looked at each other's faces seriously and it was obvious that they were both shocked by the similarity of their appearance.

"We must be twin brothers." Baby Robbie concluded.

Jenson nodded.

Baby Robbie stretched out his arms and said happily, "Although I don't know if I'm your older or your younger brother, we should hug now that we've met. Pleased to meet you."

Jenson was stunned. This was probably the first time that another kid had treated him nicely.

While he was hesitating, Baby Robbie took the initiative to hug him.

"What are you doing here?" Jenson asked again.

Baby Robbie scratched his head with embarrassment. "I'm looking for Mommy so I snuck in here. Don't tell Mommy, okay?"

Jenson was dumbfounded. "Rose is your mommy?"

Baby Robbie nodded. "She's your mommy too."

Jenson's handsome little face immediately scrunched up in anger, as if he just found out he had been pranked.

Noting Jenson's displeasure, Robbie reached out his little hand. "Jenson, what's wrong?"

"Why does Mommy only want you but not me?" Jenson mumbled dejectedly.

Baby Robbie frowned; it was not a question he could answer. However, Baby Robbie suddenly thought of something and sighed sadly.

"What's the matter with you?" Jenson shot.

"My mommy is your mommy. Your daddy must be my daddy. Maybe Mommy wanted me and not you, but why did Daddy want you but not me?"

Jenson was stunned.

The two children wallowed moodily for almost half the day before Baby Robbie finally suggested optimistically, "Jenson, don't be sad. Mommy and Daddy must have been sad to make their decision. We have to believe that they love us. Look, didn't Mommy come back to see you? You're luckier than me! I've never even seen

Baby Robbie frowned; it was not a question he could answer. However, Baby Robbie suddenly thought of something and sighed sadly.

"What's the matter with you?" Jenson shot.

"My mommy is your mommy. Your daddy must be my daddy. Maybe Mommy wanted me and not you, but why did Daddy want you but not me?"

Jenson was stunned.

The two children wallowed moodily for almost half the day before Baby Robbie finally suggested optimistically, "Jenson, don't be sad. Mommy and Daddy must have been sad to make their decision. We have to believe that they love us. Look, didn't Mommy come back to see you? You're luckier than me! I've never even seen Daddy!"

Jenson grabbed Baby Robbie's hand. "Come with me, I'll take you to them."



Jenson's eyes.

“None of your business.” Jenson angrily flung his smartwatch aside, then climbed in bed and pulled the covers over himself, pretending to sleep.

This was the first time Jenson had acted with such hostility to his daddy. Jay was both surprised and confused.

“Jenson, is it because Daddy came back late today that you're mad?” Jay said quietly, bringing out 120% of his patience to communicate with Jenson.

Jenson simply covered his face with the covers, refusing to talk to him.

Jay patted Jenson's head, saying somewhat helplessly, “Okay then. When you want to talk to Daddy, you come and find me then.”

Jay went to the study and turned on his computer. Just as he prepared to begin his work, the door was opened by Jenson.

Jay lifted his head and looked at the small figure, a gratified smile curving the

Chapter 24

The two little kids secretly hid behind the stairs on the second floor and watched Rose and Jay's interesting debate.

Rose, the opposer, was passive and lacked presence.

"Sir Ares, you always nitpick everything about me and you're never satisfied no matter what I do. What about you? You let different women pick up and send your children to and from school, but have you ever stopped to think whether your ways may affect Jenson subtly?"

"Rose, my methods are decent enough. I don't need you to remind me. Also, the different women you're talking about are all Jenson's relatives. You're the one with the dirty mind. Why should there be a problem with what I do?" Jay said angrily.

"What about Nancy? How is she related to Jenson?"

"Rose, you have no right to interfere in my personal life."

"I don't care about your personal life, but please keep your eyes open when you look for a girlfriend. Don't find an evil stepmother for Jenson. And if you ever plan to have another baby, can you try not to do it or at least hide it from Jenson until he's more secure?"

Jay frowned slightly. "Who told you I'll have a baby with Nancy?"

Rose said, "Miss Nancy said it herself."

Jay nodded. "Fine. Then, I will personally tell Jenson that I'll never give him younger brothers or sisters for the rest of his life."

Rose felt inexplicably guilty and stuttered, "Watch what you say. You can't be too sure of that. What if he suddenly gets a younger brother and a younger sister in the future?"

Jay snorted. "You think everyone's like you? Lying, cheating, faking their own death, and a multitude of other shortcomings? Rose, I highly doubt that someone like you can teach kids. Don't bother coming to work tomorrow."

someone like you can teach kids. Don't bother coming to work tomorrow."

Rose, "..."

— —

The two little babies upstairs were in an emotional mess.

Baby Robbie dragged Jenson into the room. He was surprised, happy, and anxious all at the same time.

"Jenson, we look exactly like your daddy. He must be my daddy too. But please, I beg you, don't tell Daddy that I was here today, okay? Daddy already has such a bad impression of Mommy. If he knew that I snuck in, he would hate Mommy even more."

Jenson nodded faithfully.

"What should we do?" Jenson asked.

Baby Robbie was turning around in circles. "We must find a way to make Daddy like Mommy. That way, our family can be together."

"Find a way to make Mommy stay," Jenson murmured.

Baby Robbie looked at Jenson and exclaimed, "I got it! Act cute with Daddy and beg him to let Mommy stay. Then, Daddy won't let Mommy go."

Jenson looked sheepish.

"I can't act cute."

Baby Robbie looked at Jenson's sullen face. "Okay, okay. You don't have to. I'll do it. Get me a set of your clothes and I'll pretend to be you."

Not objecting, Jenson opened the closet and Baby Robbie looked at all white, all black, all gray—all single-colored clothes.

Baby Robbie pursed his lips and pouted, "Why are your clothes so simple? Mommy said that kids should wear colorful clothes so that it feels like the Sun is in their hearts."

Jenson looked at Robbie's white shirt with a colorful Ultraman on it and curiosity flashed across his eyes.

and Baby Robbie looked at all white, all black, all gray—all single-colored clothes.

Baby Robbie pursed his lips and pouted, "Why are your clothes so simple? Mommy said that kids should wear colorful clothes so that it feels like the Sun is in their hearts."

Jenson looked at Robbie's white shirt with a colorful Ultraman on it and curiosity flashed across his eyes.

Baby Robbie changed into a plain white shirt and skipped toward the door.

Jenson stopped him quickly. "Don't skip."

Baby Robbie turned back to Jenson and showed him an OK gesture and placed one hand over his face. When he removed away, Baby Robbie's energetic face instantly switched to an expressionless iceberg.

There was a faint smile in Jenson's eyes.

Baby Robbie told Jenson, "You must hide yourself."

Chapter 25

"Okay." Jenson nodded.

Baby Robbie went down the stairs. When Jay and Rose heard the kid's footsteps, the quarrel between the two of them stopped abruptly.

Baby Robbie walked toward the two people. He looked at Mommy's puffy red eyes and then looked back at Jay; he felt a wave of inexplicable anger at Daddy.

He never dreamed that his Mommy's big bully boss would turn out to be his daddy that he thought about day and night.

Although Daddy looked cool, handsome and rich, the person that treated him the best in the world was Mommy. He would never allow anyone to bully Mommy. Not even Daddy.

"Jenson. What are you doing down here? Go up quickly, Miss Nancy has to take you to kindergarten later." Jay looked at his son, frowning slightly. He seemed to see a bit of resentment against him within the child's eyes.



That had never happened before.

Baby Robbie walked up to Jay and raised his head.

Jay froze.

Jenson usually controlled his expression down to the tiniest detail in an almost obsessive way. However, he seemed to be very expressive today!

"Daddy, I don't want Miss Nancy to send me. I want her to send me." "Jenson" pointed a finger at Rose and Jay was speechless.

Jay gently touched the boy's small head, "Jenson, Miss Loyle has something to do at home so she needs to leave our house immediately. Jenson, say goodbye to Miss Rose."

Baby Robbie turned to look at Rose and Mommy's eyes were still in tears.

Mommy told him yesterday that she could not do without this job. Obviously, Daddy was overbearing and just wanted to fire Mommy.

Baby Robbie walked toward Rose and stretched out a hand and grabbed Rose's little finger. He started acting cute. "Rose, don't go, I like you sending me to kindergarten. Please?"

Jay was dumbfounded.

That was the first time he had ever heard "Jenson" talked in such a heart-meltingly cute and warm way.

Rose rubbed her eyes. 'What's happening? How did Baby Robbie change bodies with Jenson?'

Rose squatted down and held "Jenson's" face. She said pleadingly, "Jenson, can I be a little late and leave a little early every day?"

Baby Robbie certainly knew why Mommy would ask for this. It was because Mommy had to bring him and Zetty to school. Baby Robbie, being a reasonable child, nodded without hesitation. "Of course."

Jay was so furious that his lungs almost burst. 'How dare Rose takes advantage of

burst. 'How dare Rose takes advantage of the child's innocence to get away with her bad habits.'

"I won't allow it!" Jay said angrily.

Baby Robbie stared bitterly at Jay—

He suddenly got an idea and walked slowly toward Jay. He squeezed out a few tears and looked at Jay pitifully.

"Daddy, why don't you like Rose sending me?"

Jay did not hesitate to list out Rose's faults. "She has no time management and is late for work every day—"

Baby Robbie saw an opportunity and said, "Daddy, why don't you ask her why she's late?"

'If it wasn't for taking care of your other two children, Mommy wouldn't be late!' Baby Robbie thought angrily.

Since he was in front of his son, Jay toned down his harshness. With his hawk-like eyes, he stared at Rose and showed tolerance for the first time. "Alright, tell

Since he was in front of his son, Jay toned down his harshness. With his hawk-like eyes, he stared at Rose and showed tolerance for the first time. "Alright, tell me. Why were you late?"

Rose looked embarrassed. What should she say?

Tell him that she was late because their daughter was sick? Tell him that in addition to Jenson, she actually had to pick up their other children to and back from school?

How could she expose the existence of Baby Robbie and Zetty? He might easily bully her into taking both the kids away from her.

"Hmph," Jay sneered contemptuously. "Looks like someone can't find an excuse."

"Jenson" immediately defended Rose. "Daddy, Rose may have her own problems. Maybe her kid was sick? Maybe she had to send her kid to school or pick them up?"



Chapter 26

Jay and Rose looked at "Jenson" in shock.

The words "Jenson" said rang alarms for both Jay and Rose.

Rose looked at Jay nervously, fearing that Jay would become suspicious.

Jay glared at Rose warily, his thin and charming lips curling into a sneer. "Rose, might it be that Jenson guessed it?"

Rose saw the flames rising from Jay's eyes and her heart was uneasy.

Rather than letting him find out about the truth, she thought it would be better to tell him a half-truth. "I have a daughter," she said slowly. "One year younger than Jenson... During these two days, she had a cold and fever. I was late because I had to take care of her."

Jay frowned.

He was repulsed by the thought of the woman finding another man to make babies with right after leaving him.

Jay interrupted her rudely, "I don't want to know about your family. Since you don't have the time to take care of Jenson wholeheartedly, you shouldn't take this job in the first place. Pack your things and leave immediately!"

Rose stood there, looking at "Jenson" reluctantly.

More tears rolled down from her eyes.

Baby Robbie was really upset whenever he saw Mommy crying.

'Mommy is the best Mommy in the world. Mommy works so hard every day. She gets up early and comes back late just for us. But Daddy knows nothing. He only knows how to complain about Mommy. What can I do?'

Baby Robbie suddenly got another idea and jumped onto Rose. His legs wrapped tightly around Rose's like an octopus.

Shamelessly, he said, "I won't let Rose go. Daddy, I beg you. Even though Rose is late, she treats me well. She's so knowledgeable about many things. She

knowledgeable about many things. She teaches me how to sing, how to play the piano, how to read poetry, and even how to draw..."

When he saw this, Jay could feel his temple throbbing.

Was he hallucinating?

'How did the cool little boy who would not get close to any relatives act like that for Rose? And the number of words he spoke!

That really surprised Jay.

"Jenson, get off her." Jay beckoned Baby Robbie.

"No. Unless you promise me first." Baby Robbie blinked his pair of innocent eyes at Jay and tried to bargain.

Jay was amused by his cute look and grinned slightly. "Very well, I'll let her stay. Only if you let Daddy see how much you've learned within these two days."

Baby Robbie was a naturally gifted kid. He was mentally and physically developed.

knowledgeable about many things. She teaches me how to sing, how to play the piano, how to read poetry, and even how to draw..."

When he saw this, Jay could feel his temple throbbing.

Was he hallucinating?

'How did the cool little boy who would not get close to any relatives act like that for Rose? And the number of words he spoke!

That really surprised Jay.

"Jenson, get off her." Jay beckoned Baby Robbie.

"No. Unless you promise me first." Baby Robbie blinked his pair of innocent eyes at Jay and tried to bargain.

Jay was amused by his cute look and grinned slightly. "Very well, I'll let her stay. Only if you let Daddy see how much you've learned within these two days."

Baby Robbie was a naturally gifted kid. He was mentally and physically developed.

was mentally and physically developed. He was not afraid to show Daddy what he knew.

He jumped off from Mommy and did not notice the growing suspicion in Rose's eyes.

Rose's eyes suddenly glanced upstairs...

She felt fairly certain that the talkative cute little baby was her Baby Robbie.

Baby Robbie stood in front of Jay like a little man and looked up at Daddy. He proudly said, "What do you want to test me in first?"

Jay remembered the beautiful poem that his son had praised Rose for reading.

However, when he asked Jenson to read the poem for him, Jenson was hesitant and stuttered the entire way.

"Reciting poetry," Jay said curtly.

'I wonder if my son's abnormal behavior will still dislike reciting literary poetry?'

To his surprise, Baby Robbie started reciting the poem called The Image of

"Reciting poetry," Jay said curtly.

'I wonder if my son's abnormal behavior will still dislike reciting literary poetry?'

To his surprise, Baby Robbie started reciting the poem called The Image of Orange Day-Lily. It was a poem about motherly love. "Oh, the bright orange day-lily that grew under the back east room."

...

Jay frowned and looked at Rose with dissatisfaction. 'She abandoned her child for five years and now she wanted him to praise her?'

"Change to another one," Jay snapped.

Baby Robbie started reciting another poem called The Song of the Wanderer without thinking about it.

"The fine lines on Mother's hands. The clothes of the wanderer's clothes."

...

It was yet another poem of maternal love.



Chapter 27

Jay stared daggers at Rose and almost burst into flames.

However, he had to praise his son first. "That was great," he said.

When Baby Robbie heard the compliment from Daddy, he immediately asked happily, "So, can Rose stay?"

"No," Jay replied firmly.

Rose knew what troubled Jay and quickly said, "Those two poems weren't taught by me."

Jay must have thought that she went out of her way to hype up the greatness of maternal love to prepare for their meeting as mother and son in the future.

When Baby Robbie saw Mommy's panic-stricken expression, he realized he had done something wrong.

'Those two poems were about maternal love.



‘No wonder Daddy is unhappy.’

Baby Robbie hurriedly said, "Daddy, please don't jump to conclusions. You can also test me on the other ones!"

Jay looked at the abnormal "Jenson" and asked, "What else did you learn during these two days?"

Baby Robbie saw the piano next to him, walked to the piano and played a piano piece titled Father.

Jay was so shocked that he was rooted to the spot.

Jenson hated playing the piano the most. The teacher who taught Jenson said that he was a child prodigy. Even though he could read the notes incredibly fast, he never showed any desire to practice.

Therefore, no one had ever heard his playing except during his piano class.

Grandpa and Grandma always wanted to listen to Jenson's playing but they had never baited him successfully. □

However, "Jenson" suddenly took the initiative to play the piano after all this time.

"Who taught you this song?"

Jay knew that there was no such song among Jenson's piano sheets.

Baby Robbie pointed at Rose, "She did."

Rose was so shocked that her eyes almost bulged out. She had never taught Jenson to play the piano. Why would Jenson tell such a lie?

However, she had indeed taught that song to Baby Robbie and Baby Zetty.

Jay took a long time to think.

"Jenson" was acting really unusual that day. His performance no doubt surprised him. It seemed that that was the effect of having Rose around.

When he saw Daddy still hesitating, Baby Robbie ran over and gave a kiss on Jay's face. "Daddy, so can I?"

Jay's iceberg face almost cracked in that

Jay's iceberg face almost cracked in that instant.

Baby Robbie was acting extremely cute and spoiled. "Daddy, I know you love me the most. You will agree to whatever I want, right?"

For some reason, Jay found himself nodding absently.

Baby Robbie whooped with joy, "Daddy, you're the best."

He ran upstairs, ready to share the joyful news with Jenson.

"Jenson!"

When Baby Robbie entered Jenson's room, he yelled softly.

Jenson crawled out of the closet and saw Baby Robbie's excited face.

"I did it."

Jenson looked at Baby Robbie and the expression on his face overwhelmed Jenson a little. He said tersely, "You talked too much just now." □

you're the best.

He ran upstairs, ready to share the joyful news with Jenson.

"Jenson!"

When Baby Robbie entered Jenson's room, he yelled softly.

Jenson crawled out of the closet and saw Baby Robbie's excited face.

"I did it."

Jenson looked at Baby Robbie and the expression on his face overwhelmed Jenson a little. He said tersely, "You talked too much just now."

Baby Robbie laughed sheepishly, "If I didn't try my best, Daddy would've fired Mommy."

Jenson noted, "He'll see through it soon."

As soon as he said that, there was a knock on the door from outside of his room. Jay's mellow cello-like voice called out, "Jenson!"



Chapter 28

Baby Robbie panicked and hastily crawled under the bed to hide.

Only after ensuring that Robbie was hidden did Jenson walk over to the door and open it, his handsome face expressionless as he looked at Jay.

Jay stared suspiciously at his frozen-faced iceberg of a son and furrowed his eyebrows. What happened to his animated expressions earlier.

Ruffling Jenson's black hair, Jay bid his son goodbye.

“Daddy's going to work now. The nanny will send you to school. This isn't a problem, right?”

Jenson's eyes showed some resistance, but he still nodded obediently and simply answered, “Uh-huh!”

Jay noticed the hesitation and recalled what Rose told him. The kids and parents at the kindergarten were perhaps not too friendly to Jenson. An alarm blared in Jay's

friendly to Jenson. An alarm blared in Jay's heart.

His tall frame suddenly squatted down, and he asked Jenson very seriously, "Tell Daddy. Is it true that you don't like going to kindergarten?"

Jenson twisted his head away, staying silent.

Jay sighed softly. Every time he had to communicate issues like this with Jenson, Jenson always responded with this same indifferent attitude.

He had always thought that with his position of authority, there would be nobody who would dare provoke his son.

However, he had clearly forgotten that in order to let Jenson have a normal childhood, he had not given the kindergarten Jenson's real profile.

When Jay came down from the second floor, Rose had already organized the toys in the play area tidily. Upon turning her head and seeing the stony-faced Jay standing behind her, Rose jumped.

standing behind her, Rose jumped.

“Sir Ares, what other business do you have?” Rose asked with lingering fear.

“Rose Loyle, stop using your false motherly love to influence Jenson. You’ll only make him worse this way.” Jay ground his teeth angrily.

Jenson’s moods were unstable, making it hard for him to adapt.

Rose retorted, “Isn’t Jenson’s performance today great? He spoke much more than usual, didn't he?”

Jay snarled in a lowered voice, “His performance today was like a schizophrenic patient. This is all thanks to you. Rose Loyle, I’m holding you responsible when I come back.” After leaving those ruthless words, Jay left.

Upon hearing the word “schizophrenic”, Rose was so shocked, her entire body weakened.

Jenson was also her darling son. It was natural that she hoped Jenson would develop in a positive way. If her

develop in a positive way. If her appearance caused her child's mental illness to worsen, she would not be able to forgive herself.

“Jenson...”

Rose frantically ran upstairs.

When Baby Robbie heard Mommy's voice coming upstairs, it startled him out of his soul.

“Jenson, I must go now.”

Baby Robbie crawled out the window after saying this. Jenson chased him and said, “Give me a way to contact you!”

“Okay.” Baby Robbie gave him his phone number and Jenson memorized it.

Knock, knock, knock!

Knocks sounded on the door.

Jenson cautiously shut the window. He walked to the edge of the door and opened it.

As Rose gazed upon Jenson's face, which had gone back to the cool, frozen

Knocks sounded on the door.

Jenson cautiously shut the window. He walked to the edge of the door and opened it.

As Rose gazed upon Jenson's face, which had gone back to the cool, frozen expression, she finally understood the reason Jay suspected the child was schizophrenic.

Jenson looked at Rose through lifted eyes, different from the usual cold indifference. His gaze today had a deeper sense of probing.

All along, Rose was the mommy he had been missing every day!

“Jens, Daddy asked me to take you to school.” Deep inside, Rose was not at all willing to bring Jenson to school, but because of Jay's authority, she had to obey.

However, she still expressed it in a way that made Jay out to be the bad guy.



Chapter 29

This time, Jenson unexpectedly nodded his head obediently!

He did not want Mommy to think that he was a bad good child.

After Rose dropped Jenson off at school, Jenson entered the school gates in a very well-behaved manner.

Rose was a little stunned. Why was this child so good today? He was actually listening to whatever she said?

In the afternoon, Rose went to the kindergarten to bring Jenson home.

The moment Jenson walked out of the kindergarten, Rose nearly broke down in tears.

Jenson's clean white T-shirt was covered in dirt and ink, and his face was covered in many marks from being bullied by the other students. There were many long, bloody fingernail marks, as well as a split in his lip that was oozing fresh blood.



Upon seeing Rose, Jenson ducked to the side, clearly not wanting her to see the mess he was in.

Rose ran up and pulled Jenson into her embrace. "Jenson!"

Hugging Jenson tightly, tears welled up in her eyes.

Jenson looked at Rose. Previously, there were times where he returned from school looking even worse, yet he had never seen anyone cry over him before. Daddy's staff and women all said that it was normal for children to fight.

"Does it hurt?" Rose asked, looking up with teary eyes.

Jenson shook his head. "It doesn't hurt. The others were hurt even more."

Was he boasting that he had beaten up other people?

Rose felt even sadder. Jenson said "them". It was obvious that it was not just one kid that bullied him.



"Does it hurt?" Rose asked,

“Does the teacher know?” Rose asked.

Jenson nodded. “They were scolded.”

Rose carried Jenson up and headed back.

Jenson rested against her shoulder. It was his first time enjoying the warmth of a mother’s love, and Jenson was so tired that he fell asleep on her shoulder.

The distance from the kindergarten to Horizon Colors was not too far, but it was not short either. By walking, it required around twenty minutes.

Rose did not call for a car though, as she relished the feeling of carrying Jenson even more. It was as if she had all the security in the world.

A Rolls-Royce Silver Seraph had been following Rose from behind for an uncertain amount of time. The man in the backseat was not a common passerby, and his eyes that were as sharp as a hawk were staring straight at Rose.

In the driver’s seat, Grayson was perplexed.

“Mr. Ares, Master Jenson is not close to any of us. If we were the ones to send him to school and back, Master Jenson would be full of resentment. Why is it that when Miss Rose does it, he doesn't make a fuss?”

Jay was also considering this problem with furrowed brows.

Grayson lamented, “Could this be the legendary bond between mother and son?”

Jay darted Grayson a cold look, and the man hastily corrected his words. “Bah, how could a mother-son bond develop between Master Jenson and Miss Rose? The one who brought him up through countless hardships was Mr. Ares, so he'd only develop a bond with you, sir.”

Although in his heart, he did not want to admit that Rose and Jenson were getting along very well, the facts spoke for themselves.

Jay glared at Grayson resentfully. “Wasn't this your lousy idea? Is this supposed to be retaliating against Rose?”

how could a mother-son bond develop between Master Jenson and Miss Rose? The one who brought him up through countless hardships was Mr. Ares, so he'd only develop a bond with you, sir."

Although in his heart, he did not want to admit that Rose and Jenson were getting along very well, the facts spoke for themselves.

Jay glared at Grayson resentfully. "Wasn't this your lousy idea? Is this supposed to be retaliating against Rose?"

Grayson gazed at the display of affection between Rose and Jenson and laughed awkwardly.

"Sorry, Mr. Ares."

"I'll give you a chance to redeem yourself," Jay said coldly.

Grayson frantically nodded and bowed. "Yes, of course, Mr. Ares. I'll definitely think of a way to make Miss Rose's life uncomfortable!"



Chapter 30

After Rose carried Jenson home and settled him down, she called Jay right away.

“Hello, Sir Ares, Jenson’s home already. The kid suffered quite some indignity in school today. I hope you can properly face the issue of Jenson’s resistance to school —”

Rose gravely told him about Jenson’s situation, but she only got halfway before Jay interrupted her rudely. “Rose Loyle, may I remind you that it’s not your place to teach me how to manage my own child.”

His words were an obvious declaration of who reigned over the child.

Rose sighed helplessly.

“You can go back now. I’ll arrive soon.” After saying this, Jay hung up.

Then he gave an order to Grayson. “Park the car at the side.”

Not long after, Rose walked out of the Ares family villa carrying her purse. She looked like she was in a rush as she hurried toward the bus stop.

Just as Jay was about to get out of the car, he changed his mind upon seeing the hurrying Rose and said to Grayson, “Follow her.”

About forty to fifty minutes later, Rose appeared outside the gates of City North Experimental Kindergarten.

The Rolls-Royce stopped at a place not too far nor too close to her.

When the end-of-school bell rang, the children walked out in systematic lines.

Zetty saw Mommy from afar and excitedly waved her arms, running like the wind toward Mommy. “Mommy!”

Rose spread her arms open, and Zetty crashed head-first into her embrace.

“Mommy, did your boss let you get off work on time today? He didn't make things difficult for you?”



Rose nodded happily. “Uh-huh.”

Zetty called out joyfully. It seemed Baby Robbie’s trip to negotiate with Mommy’s boss was very effective!

In the Rolls-Royce, Jay’s gaze locked on the child’s unexpectedly adorable face.

With her round face, black eyes that glittered like gems, straight and pert nose, and fair skin, she looked just as dainty as a doll.

An inexplicably sour feeling bloomed in Jay’s chest. “Rose could birth such an adorable daughter?”

Grayson was speechless. “....”

He spoke inwardly. ‘Since Rose could give birth to a baby as handsome as Jenson, why can’t she give birth to a beautiful daughter?’

Jay could not tear his gaze from Zetty even if he stared for half a day. A revelation hit him a moment later. Was this little dumpling not that little girl he saw at the airport that day?

So, she was Rose's daughter.

Hence, that exotic woman he met at the airport that day was indeed Rose?

In order to hide from him, there was really nothing Rose would not do!

Seeing Zetty's resemblance to Rose's, Grayson could not help inwardly lighting a candle in mourning for Rose.

Miss Loyle must have married another man and had a child after divorcing Mr. Ares. With Mr. Ares's paranoid mysophobia, it was unlikely he would take this matter kindly.

The end of Rose Loyle's days might be coming soon!

His face green, Jay pushed the car door open. In two or three strides of his long legs, he stepped in front of Rose and her daughter.

Seeing this cold-faced man, Zetty immediately shouted fearfully, "Mommy, the trafficker man—"



a candle in mourning for Rose.

Miss Loyle must have married another man and had a child after divorcing Mr. Ares. With Mr. Ares's paranoid mysophobia, it was unlikely he would take this matter kindly.

The end of Rose Loyle's days might be coming soon!

His face green, Jay pushed the car door open. In two or three strides of his long legs, he stepped in front of Rose and her daughter.

Seeing this cold-faced man, Zetty immediately shouted fearfully, "Mommy, the trafficker man—"

Jay's face turned into a mix of shock and embarrassment.

He fished out his wallet and produced a large stack of bills, shoving them in Zetty's hands before snapping at Baby Zetty impatiently, "You can't call me a trafficker from now on."



Chapter 31

Baby Zetty was taken aback by the man's sudden actions. She clutched the money absently, completely bewildered.

“I don't lack money,” added Jay testily, clearly implying that he had no need to traffic kids.

Zetty passed the money back to Jay, apologizing softly, “Sorry, mister. I won't call you the trafficker man anymore. And I don't want this money.”

Jay was surprised. Despite her young age, the child knew not to accept freebies that were possibly tainted.

Ever since Jay arrived, Rose found it difficult to breathe. “Zetty, this man is Mommy's new boss,” she choked. “Go play over there. Mommy will talk to him.”

As soon as she was told the man's identity, Zetty immediately started negotiating with Jay. “Mister, can you stop giving so much work to my mommy? My mommy's so tired.”

Although he would never admit it, Jay could not help but feel a little jealous of Rose. This woman had such a caring daughter. How enviable.

However, his temper was still actively bubbling within him, and he rebuffed Zetty stoically. “The amount of work is reasonable,” he snapped. “It’s just that your mommy is too clumsy.”

Zetty disliked people criticizing her mommy and rolled her eyes at Jay. “Mommy was right. The nature of capitalists is to maximize the extortion of labor from workers.”

Jay’s face hardened.

However, when he saw Zetty roll her eyes, Jay spaced out for a moment.

He had seen this technique from someone else.

That person was Angeline Severe.

When Angeline made this expression, it was that of a naughty child. She melted his heart.

Rose pulled Zetty aside frantically. “Zetty, you can’t be rude to this mister. Mommy has an important matter to discuss with him. You can’t disturb adults when they’re talking about serious things.”

In front of Mommy, Zetty instantly became an angelic doll and nodded obediently.

Rose returned to Jay’s side. The uncertainty on her face was noticed by Jay. She seemed to be weighed down by a guilty conscience.

“Rose, is that your daughter?” The corners of Jay’s mouth lifted slightly.

Rose never thought the constantly busy Jay would come and personally investigate her. Was he so bored out of his mind that his balls ached?

Rose nodded curtly.

Jay leaned over, putting his mouth right by her ear.

Rose was terribly nervous, her entire

Rose was terribly nervous, her entire body tensed like a bowstring. His devilish voice pierced her ears as he whispered, “Rose, didn’t you swear to the heavens back then that you’d love only me? Marrying someone else right after divorcing me and having a daughter so soon... You really have an insatiable appetite for men.”

Rose stared at Jay, feeling conflicted. This man was info smart, yes, but sadly, he did not have a good eye.

His own daughter was in front of him, yet he could not tell?

Still...

He could not be blamed for the lack of resemblance in her appearance. Who asked Zetty to not inherit her daddy’s genes? It was just like how Robbie and Jens shied away from their mommy’s genes. There was absolutely no trace of their other parent's looks.

“Disgusting.”

Jay straightened his powerful figure. His

Jens snied away from their mommy's genes. There was absolutely no trace of their other parent's looks.

“Disgusting.”

Jay straightened his powerful figure. His mesmerizing lips spat the word out with venom.

Rose shrunk into herself like a quail, not making a sound or trying to retort.

She was afraid anything she said would only make things worse!

Jay glanced over her icily and said forcefully, “From now on, don't let Jenson see you again.”

A second ago, Rose could still act spineless, but now she tugged on Jenson's hand, pleading softly, “Sir Ares—Jens needs his mommy—”

Jay loathingly slapped her hand aside. “No, he doesn't!” he snarled. Without another word, he strode with comet-like steps toward the car.



Chapter 32

Rose watched the Rolls-Royce leave, dust flying behind its trails, and tears rolled down her face.

Jay had misunderstood her from top to bottom. Banning her from seeing Jenson was a blatant attempt to mercilessly sever their mother-son bond.

When Baby Robbie came out of kindergarten, he saw Mommy's shoulders shaking, clearly crying.

Baby Robbie hurried over to comfort her. "Mommy, what happened?"

Zetty reported to her brother indignantly. "Robbie, Mommy's boss came just now. He fired Mommy, so Mommy's jobless now."

Baby Robbie's small face paled slightly. He knew that Mommy's boss was Jenson's daddy.

If Mommy lost her job, would that mean Mommy could never see Jenson again?

No wonder Mommy was crying so badly.

No wonder Mommy was crying so badly.

Rose stumped toward Splendid Town with reddened eyes, a child in each hand.

Baby Robbie watches Mommy's eyes, which were thoroughly bloodshot from crying. The glorious image of Daddy in his heart was somewhat obliterated.

Daddy only knew how to make Mommy cry. He did not want a daddy like this.

Hmph.

However, at night, Baby Robbie received an unexpected call from Jenson.

Jenson was silent for a long while. He did not know how to express himself.

Baby Robbie took the initiative to speak up. "Do you miss Mommy?"

"Uh-huh." Jenson nodded after a pause.

Baby Robbie said sullenly, "But I don't miss Daddy at all because he bullied Mommy today. Hmph." He huffed and hung up.



Jenson stared blankly at the smartwatch, feeling at a loss.

When Jay pushed open the door and entered, he saw Jenson staring dazedly at his smartwatch. The screen of the smartwatch shone with a blue light.

This surprised Jay immensely; Jenson had not charged his smartwatch in ages.

“Jenson, who are you trying to call?”

Jay walked over, pulled up a chair, and sat in front of Jenson.

Jenson looked at him. Recalling Baby Robbie claims that Daddy bullied Mommy, a curious hint of anger flared in Jenson’s eyes.

“None of your business.” Jenson angrily flung his smartwatch aside, then climbed in bed and pulled the covers over himself, pretending to sleep.

This was the first time Jenson had acted with such hostility to his daddy. Jay was both surprised and confused.



“Jenson, is it because Daddy came back late today that you’re mad?” Jay said quietly, bringing out 120% of his patience to communicate with Jenson.

Jenson simply covered his face with the covers, refusing to talk to him.

Jay patted Jenson’s head, saying somewhat helplessly, “Okay then. When you want to talk to Daddy, you come and find me then.”

Jay went to the study and turned on his computer. Just as he prepared to begin his work, the door was opened by Jenson.

Jay lifted his head and looked at the small figure, a gratified smile curving the corners of his mouth.

On the other hand, Jenson stood silently beside the door, sullenness faintly surfacing over his handsome features. His fists were clenched tight as if he was about to challenge Daddy.

Jay frowned.

“Tomorrow, I want Rose to send me to

Jay patted Jenson's head, saying somewhat helplessly, "Okay then. When you want to talk to Daddy, you come and find me then."

Jay went to the study and turned on his computer. Just as he prepared to begin his work, the door was opened by Jenson.

Jay lifted his head and looked at the small figure, a gratified smile curving the corners of his mouth.

On the other hand, Jenson stood silently beside the door, sullenness faintly surfacing over his handsome features. His fists were clenched tight as if he was about to challenge Daddy.

Jay frowned.

"Tomorrow, I want Rose to send me to school." It took a lot of effort for Jenson to say what was in his heart.

Jay clapped. "Not bad. There's an improvement. You're speaking with more and more words."



Chapter 33

Jenson looked at Jay. “Then will you let her come?”

Jay stood up and walked over to Jenson. He attempted to reason his son. “Jenson, Miss Loyle’s house has another kid, and Miss Loyle needs to take care of her. Be a good boy. Daddy will find an even better nanny to look after you, how about that?”

Jenson shook his head vehemently. “I don’t want that.” Tears started swirling in his eyes.

Jay enveloped Jenson in an embrace, warmly placating Jenson’s close-to-crumbling emotions. “Jens, Daddy will find a mommy for you, okay?”

“I don’t want that,” Jenson repeated. He suddenly shoved Jay away and turned around, dashing toward the garden.

The omnipotent Jay felt powerless for the first time in his life.

Jenson wanted Mommy. If Rose had been someone fitting of the title, perhaps he

someone fitting of the title, perhaps he could have convinced himself to let go of his personal grudge to fulfill Jenson.

However, Rose was a pathological liar and had so many blemishes on her character. How could he let a woman like this get close to Jenson?

He could not be sure, but what if she had gotten closer to Jenson for money? If she achieved her goal and fled, just like last time, would that not be an even bigger blow to Jenson?

Jenson sat moodily on the swing, tears dripping silently down his face.

Seeing Jenson's pitiable figure, Jay sighed helplessly.

Meanwhile, in Splendid Town.

After Rose entered the house, it was like her soul had left her body. Everything she did was done absently and emotionlessly.

While cooking noodles for the kids, she forgot to add salt.

While washing the dishes, she forgot to turn the tap on

While washing the dishes, she forgot to turn the tap on.

Watching his soulless Mommy, Baby Robbie made up his mind. He had to help Mommy return to Horizon Colors.

He hid in the house and sneakily sent Jenson a text: "Jenson, I want to see Daddy and make him not fire Mommy. Can you switch places with me?"

When he received Baby Robbie's text, it was as Jenson had been revived. His tensed face relaxed. "Okay," he sent back. If Baby Robbie switched identities with him, then he could see Mommy. Baby Robbie could see Daddy too.

"I'll wait for you at eight in the morning tomorrow at the Cade Mall near your house. Be there."

"Okay."

Jay folded his arms, watching intently as the half-smile appeared on his son's face.

His gaze turned to the child's smartphone. Was he... communicating

smartphone. Was he... communicating with Rose? Was that why he was so happy?

As Jay walked over with the intent of discovering his son's secret, Jenson swiftly erased the record of his conversation with Baby Robbie. Seeing Jay staring at his watch, he moved to hand the watch to his father, looking pleased.

Jay smiled and said lightly, "Jenson, do you want Daddy to recover the deleted conversation records?"

Jenson immediately retracted his hand and stuffed the watch into his pocket, saying curtly, "Going to sleep." Then he went into the house and slept.

Jenson's reaction affirmed Jay's suspicion.

So he was chatting with Rose just now?

Frustration bloomed in Jay's heart. He had brought Jenson up for five years, yet he had been completely won over by his mother in less than five days?

By the time Jay got back to the child's room, Jenson was already deep in sweet slumber.

Jay wrinkled his brows. The little man who had so vehemently confronted him earlier had been coaxed into obedience with just a single text from Rose?

Jay shook his head. Tomorrow, he would properly teach his son what was meant by "wealth cannot win, poverty cannot move, and power cannot bend"!

The next day.

While Jay was still contemplating who should send his family's precious little lord to school, he saw Jenson walk out with his schoolbag slung over his back. He reported formally as if he was a grown adult. "I'll go to school myself from now on."

Before Jay could recover from the shock, Jenson had already pulled the door open and walked out.



Chapter 34

When Jenson arrived at the Cade Mall near the villa, Baby Robbie flew toward him on his scooter. “Jenson!”

When Jenson saw Baby Robbie, his ice-cold expression relaxed slightly.

Baby Robbie stopped in front of him and then eagerly told Jenson his plan. “Jenson, let’s go switch clothes in the restroom now. Then I’ll go to your kindergarten and you go to mine. After school ends, I’ll go to Horizon Colors and you’ll go to Splendid Town. This way, Daddy and Mommy can’t notice we’ve swapped places.”

“Splendid Town?”

When Jenson heard the familiar name, a memory flashed in his mind: the IP address of the hacker called Master Robbie who compromised Grand Asia a few days ago. He put two and two together.

“You’re Master Robbie?”



Baby Robbie gave a sheepish smile. “Daddy bullied Mommy. I was just giving Daddy a small punishment for Mommy.”

“Childish,” Jenson said coolly.

As he tugged Jenson toward the restrooms, Robbie said tentatively, “Jenson, can you not tell Daddy about what I did to punish him? If Daddy knew I was being naughty, he definitely won’t like me.”

Loyal as ever, Jenson answered readily, “Of course.”

Baby Robbie heartfully exclaimed, “Jenson, I’m so happy to have a brother like you.”

Jenson was slightly stunned. This was his first time hearing a kid express fondness to him.

The two of them changed their clothes and came out. Jenson now wore a grass-green T-shirt printed with the picture of Armor Hero and slim fit jeans. Topped with a duckbill hat, it gave off a very hip-hop style. With his usual cold expression,

hop style. With his usual cold expression, he inexplicably gave people the impression that he was a big star.

Baby Robbie wore Jenson's white shirt, black trousers, and shining little leather shoes. With his head of elegant, soft hair, he looked just like a little prince who stepped out of a comic book, classy and refined.

As the two kids looked at each other, they felt a curious but joyful urge to laugh.

Baby Robbie's personality was an open book. Every emotion was written on his face. He grinned, revealing a row of neat, snow-white baby teeth.

On the other hand, Jenson was an expert at hiding his emotions and looked like he was adamantly forcing back a smile. Baby Robbie could not resist teasing him. "Just smile if you want to smile. What are you holding back for?"

A faint smile, barely perceptible, appeared on Jenson's face.

Baby Robbie added a special warning for

Baby Robbie added a special warning for Jenson. “Right, I forgot to tell you something. When you go to my kindergarten, my teachers and classmates probably can't tell the difference, but not Zetty. She's brighter than my other classmates and knows me especially well. Say more and smile more when you see her, or your cover will be blown.”

“Who's Zetty?” Jenson snapped, his brows furrowed.

Asking him to speak and smile more was worse than a death sentence.

However, Baby Robbie's next sentence seemed to reduce Jenson into a slow-witted duck. “Zetty is our little sister.”

“Little sister?”

“I forgot to tell you. Actually, we're not twins, we're triplets. You and I are probably identical, and Zetty's our fraternal triplet. That's why the two of us look like Daddy, and Zetty looks like Mommy,” Baby Robbie explained.

However, Baby Robbie's next sentence seemed to reduce Jenson into a slow-witted duck. "Zetty is our little sister."

"Little sister?"

"I forgot to tell you. Actually, we're not twins, we're triplets. You and I are probably identical, and Zetty's our fraternal triplet. That's why the two of us look like Daddy, and Zetty looks like Mommy," Baby Robbie explained.

Jenson felt like he had been struck by lightning. He gasped, "Triplets?"

Baby Robbie nodded. "Uh-huh. Zetty is Mommy's number-one fan. It's best not to let her know of our swapping identities because she will definitely take sides when it comes to Daddy and Mommy. She'll blindly support Mommy."

Jenson said shortly, "Okay."

His explanations complete, Baby Robbie waved goodbye to Jenson. "I'll be going then. See you, Jenson."



Chapter 35

Jenson nodded as usual.

City South Montessori Kindergarten!

Baby Robbie stared at the supremely extravagant kindergarten, light shining from his eyes. “So this is how a rich kid’s kindergarten is?”

As Baby Robbie entered the kindergarten, a few classmates brushed past his shoulders. When they saw Baby Robbie, they naturally thought he was the untalkative, easy-to-bully Jenson.

They deliberately mocked him. “Look, that autistic kid is back again.”

Baby Robbie was furious. So this was how they regularly insulted Jenson.

Jenson was his brother. He would not let anyone bully Jenson.

Baby Robbie charged at him and snarled, “Apologize!”

The kids burst into laughter. One of the tougher-looking kids was taller than the

tougher-looking kids was taller than the other students by a head. He walked up and shoved Baby Robbie, haughtily trying to intimidate him. “Tattletale, if you want us to apologize, then crawl out from under my legs.”

Baby Robbie had been learning taekwondo since he was little and had a sturdy build. He did not move at all when the fatso pushed him.

Whenever Jenson found himself in such a situation, he would impatiently try to escape the crowded mess as fast as possible. However, the more he wanted to escape, the more this group of kids enjoyed bullying him.

Hence, a vicious cycle developed—whenever Jenson came to school, this group of naughty children would pick on him. As time passed, Jenson developed his loathing of the school.

However, Baby Robbie was not Jenson. His personality was robust. He loved playing around, and his worst fear was school being boring. ○ □

The fatso walked up to Baby Robbie and spread his legs. He pointed below him and ordered Baby Robbie, “Tattletale, crawl under. Then I won’t bother you for today.”

Baby Robbie flung his schoolbag to the ground.

The group of kids thought he was going to crawl beneath the large kid and started clapping and chanting, “Crawl, crawl, crawl...”

To everyone's shock, with one sweeping kick, Baby Robbie sent the fatso stumbling to the ground. The kick made the fatso tumble over, and he started crying at once.

Seeing their ringleader being harassed, his underlings surrounded Baby Robbie. It was one against five. Baby Robbie let loose and had them all wailing with a reverse kick.

Baby Robbie coolly picked up his schoolbag and threatened them forcefully. “I never hit back before not because I was scared of you guys. I just

forcefully. “I never hit back before not because I was scared of you guys. I just didn’t want to fight you. If you guys call me a tattletale again in the future, I’ll give you what you want. I won’t tell the teacher. I’ll use my fists to deal with all of you.”

Baby Robbie’s pummeling had given the group of kids bruised noses and swollen faces. All of them went crying to the teacher.

Baby Robbie stuck his tongue out at them. “Who’s the tattletale now?”

He had expelled some bad air on Jenson's behalf today. He doubted this group of little bullies would dare to torment Jenson from now on.

Very soon, Baby Robbie was called by the teacher to the office.

The sharp-eyed teacher was aware that not the fatso and his lackeys were from well-off and powerful families. As such, she was particularly hard on the “Jenson” who had entered the school with his “commoner” status.

He had expelled some bad air on Jenson's behalf today. He doubted this group of little bullies would dare to torment Jenson from now on.

Very soon, Baby Robbie was called by the teacher to the office.

The sharp-eyed teacher was aware that not the fatso and his lackeys were from well-off and powerful families. As such, she was particularly hard on the “Jenson” who had entered the school with his “commoner” status.

“Jenson, why did you fight?” The teacher turned on Jenson, stern-faced.

While Baby Robbie was still organizing his words, he heard the teacher sigh. She muttered beneath her breath, “Just having problem students like this around is a bother.”

“Jenson, call your parents. Get your dad and mom to the kindergarten.” The teacher made the decision to call his parents.



Chapter 36

This was the first time since “Jenson” first started school that his parents had to be called in.

Thus, when Jay received the kindergarten teacher’s call, Jay was taken aback. “What happened with Jenson?”

“It’s not right to speak of it on the phone. It’s better if you come to the school, please.” Toward a parent with no significant background, the teacher was never more courteous than necessary.

Jay immediately rushed to the kindergarten.

In the teachers’ office, he saw “Jenson” standing facing a white wall, forced to reflect on his action.

When the teacher saw Jay, she felt her breath being taken away by the molded beauty of his appearance. His tall and fit figure, as well as the air of distant arrogance hanging over him, rendered

her speechless for quite some time.

Jenson's daddy was a complete stunner!

He was much better-looking than all the huge superstars.

Good heavens, if she had known Jenson's daddy was so handsome earlier, she would not have been so cold on the phone earlier.

Jay took little notice that he had already become this young female teacher's object of interest. He walked toward "Jenson", tenderly turning his son to face him.

"What have you done?" he asked.

Baby Robbie shook like a rattle drum.

Jay's eyebrows knitted. Jenson never lied. If he did not feel he had done anything wrong, then it must have been the teacher's mistake.

Jay aimed his cold gaze at the female teacher and snapped, "What happened?"

That natural perfection of his alpha vibes suffused the air instantly.

The female teacher was so nervous that her heart was pounding. The words she had originally organized became all jumbled up in that instant.

“Jenson... He fought with his classmates... The other students have all been bruised and swollen up...”

Jay's gaze swept over the students standing parallel to Jenson. He saw the injuries on their faces, and his eyebrows furrowed slightly.

“Jenson, are you hurt?”

Rather than pursue his son's wrongdoing, Jay was more concerned about his son's wellbeing.

Baby Robbie jerked his head, his innocent gaze falling on his daddy.

Seeing “Jenson's” pale, unblemished face, Jay gave a curt nod, relieved.

Only then did he lift his eyes to look icily at the female teacher.

“Six kids fighting Jenson. Strictly speaking, this sounds like a case of

schoolyard bullying. Montessori Kindergarten is supposed to be the best kindergarten in this city, but it seems it can't live up to its reputation..."

The female teacher was shocked by Jay's aggressive manner and, in her current state of panic, she began flinging out all the excuses she had.

"Jenson's father, this matter cannot be classified as a typical schoolyard bullying. Your Jenson is a psychologically-abnormal autistic child and is easily angered, not to mention he's not good at expressing himself, so it's inevitable that he'd cause squabbles with other students ..."

The female teacher could not say any further because she saw Jay's handsome face rapidly become like a cage of ice.

It was not just Jay who was angry. Baby Robbie was even angrier. Jenson clearly did not have autism and was a child who had perfect control over his emotions. How could he just be vilified through this teacher's lips like some devil child?

Baby Robbie decided to retaliate for Jenson.

As the female teacher secretly found respite behind the knowledge that Jenson was an autistic child who would not tell his dad what happened, Baby Robbie's attitude flipped suddenly and he piped up, "Daddy, they're the ones bullying me. They called me a tattletale and wanted me to crawl between that fatty's legs. If I didn't crawl, they would've beaten me—"

The female teacher hastily interrupted "Jenson". "Jenson, you can't tell lies. You aren't hurt. They're the ones who are injured."

Watching this sharp-eyed female teacher, Baby Robbie felt he had to show Daddy this female teacher's true colors.

"Daddy..." Baby Robbie squeezed out a few tears, trying to appear as pitiful as he could as he stared at Jay. "She said I'm a problem student. She said I'm a bother."

Jay's pupils contracted, and his expression blackened. A dangerous aura

emitted from him, like the darkness before a storm.

The female teacher was so startled she broke out in cold sweat. Today's Jenson was more unusual than she ever expected. She had never seen him speak so much in one breath.

The female teacher recovered from her moment of panic. She recognized Jenson as a commoner student. Jay was just some unknown small fry who had to sell an arm and a leg to send his child to an upper-class kindergarten. His child being bullied was ultimately caused by his inferior background.

Furthermore, to be able to teach at this school, she had quite the solid background herself.

She chose to disregard him. Putting on a distressed face, she continued to criticize Jenson. "Jenson, how can you accuse me of such a thing? You disappoint me!"

Then she added contemptuously to Jenson, "Sir, I must say that Jenson's circumstances are really unsuitable for

attending kindergarten. It's better if you just bring him home to rest."

He did not have a significant background yet still wanted to attend an upper-class kindergarten. He could not blame others for getting bullied!

After the teacher had finished speaking, a layer of thousand-year-old ice shrouded Jay's handsome face. A mutinous coldness emitted from him.

Readers also enjoyed



Adorable Baby at the Door: Mo...

Marriage

Romance

Goodgirl

559.0K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 37

The temperature in the room fell by a few degrees.

He had never imagined that Jenson would be facing such unfair treatment at school.

Very well. Great!

Jay was the image of Yama, the king of hell, as he pinned the female teacher with a deadly glare.

“I think the one who should go home to rest is you,” Jay said coolly, whipping out his phone to make a call.

The female teacher looked satisfied, certain that the man was intimidated by her words and was now begging someone to help preserve Jenson's place at school.

However, in the next moment, she received an unexpected call from the director.

Glancing at Jay's calm and prideful demeanor, a feeling of uneasiness

bloomed within her chest. The hand clutching her phone started sweating.

Her conceited manner of speaking immediately switched to a courteous, pleasant one. “Director, is there an issue?”

“You’ve just offended a powerful and important figure,” the director roared. “Pack your things and get out this instant!”

The director was fuming. How impertinent! She had the nerve to offend the famous Yama, the god of death—Master Ares. She even went so far as to shame the Ares family’s darling young master!

It was bad enough to court her own death, but Montessori Kindergarten must not be dragged down with her!

“What?”

Hearing the director’s words, the female teacher’s eyes widened in disbelief, and cold sweat appeared on her forehead.

She had offended an almighty important

figure? When did this happen?

Her heart gave a sudden thump!

Could it be...

The teacher looked incredulously at Jay, who was emitting the cold aura of death. Was he the important man in question?

It was impossible, she thought. Jenson hailed from a regular family. How could he be an important figure!

The teacher hastily asked, "Director, perhaps you've mistaken me for someone else? I haven't offended any important figures."

The director could not hold back a mirthless laugh. She was already nearing death's door, yet she still stuck to her guns. He was disappointed in the woman whom he had placed high expectations on. He said shortly, "Grand Asia's successor — Master Ares. He's Jenson's father!" After spitting out those words, he hung up.

Grand Asia's Master Ares — the famous, omnipotent Jay Ares! ①

The female teacher nearly fainted. Jenson's father was secretly the most important person affiliated with their school!

The desperate teacher instantly turned to plead with and apologize to Jay, but Jay had already carried "Jenson" away ages ago.

She was doomed!

She might have no way to gain a foothold in the Capital Imperial anymore in this lifetime!

Jay stuffed his son into the Rolls-Royce and brought "Jenson" home, his face dark.

Recalling the kids and the teacher's unfriendly treatment of Jenson, Jay felt a sense of shame brimming.

Rose had only gone to the kindergarten for a single day and had spotted the teacher and students' bullying of Jenson. Why had he never noticed?

"Jenson, if you don't like this kindergarten, Daddy will move you to a

different one, alright?"

Jay dropped the stubborn refusal he had previously set down in front of Rose.

Perhaps Rose was right, after all. The environment shaped people, and changing kindergartens would ultimately be better for Jenson's wellbeing.

Baby Robbie blinked his large black eyes. Did Daddy want to change Jenson's kindergarten? He felt uncomfortable making a decision on Jenson's behalf.

Jay patted Baby Robbie's head. "Let Daddy know after you've considered it."

Baby Robbie nodded. "Okay."

Jay suddenly remembered something. "That's right. Tonight, we'll go to Grandpa's to eat. Is that okay?"

Baby Robbie's charming eyes shone with a curious light. He could see Grandpa and Grandma?

"Yeah!" Baby Robbie nodded enthusiastically.

Jay was a little surprised by the child's

excitement. He used to despise going to Grandpa and Grandma's house because Josephine liked to tease him whenever he refused to talk. After a few trips, Jenson decidedly disliked going to Grandpa and Grandma's house.

On top of that, he also did not welcome Grandpa, Grandma, and Aunt Josephine at his house.

As time passed, the trips between the two houses became less and less frequent.

While Baby Robbie monopolized Jenson's bed and Jenson's daddy, enjoying the prince-like treatment Jenson was accustomed to, Jenson was welcoming a brand new day for himself too.

Chapter 38

City North, Xinxin Kindergarten.

The moment Jenson arrived at the kindergarten, he received a warm welcome from his teacher and fellow students.

“Baby Robbie, I brought a new toy today. Do you want to play with me?”

“Baby Robbie, shall we play a game together?”

...

Jenson gaped at the cute kids and nodded back at them.

Baby Robbie’s personality was likable, and Jenson was sincerely happy for him.

Jenson was eager to know which of the kids was his little sister, Zetty. As he had not yet met Zetty, he was very curious about this unknown sister.

“Baby Robbie, your sister is crying.”
Suddenly, a kid ran over and pulled

Jenson toward the flower stands at the kindergarten.

Upon hearing that, a sliver of worry crept into Jenson's face.

What made her cry?

He strove to never cry, as Daddy had taught him: real men do not cry at the drop of a hat!

Therefore, when Jenson heard that Zetty was crying, he was expecting horrific news.

When the kid pulled Jenson in front of Zetty, the sight before him had Jenson dumbstruck.

Zetty was holding a snail while she bawled her eyes out, looking like a timid calico cat. "Waaa, I stepped on and broke the snail's home. What can I do?" ①

Jenson was speechless.


However, he noted that Zetty's face, which bore a striking resemblance to Mommy's, was extremely adorable. Her big, protuberant eyes, delicate lips, and

small, button nose looked exactly like a doll's, and it was very easy on the eyes. A sense of brotherly protection sprouted within Jenson.

He walked up and patted Zetty's shoulder as he said softly, "Don't cry. The snail's shell can grow back if it's broken."

Zetty stopped crying and offered a watery smile. She carefully put the snail down in the grass and said to the snail in an incredibly gentle tone, "Little snail, I'm sorry. I didn't do it on purpose. Go and find your mommy quickly, or else you'll be rained on when it rains."

The little snail crawled slowly into the deeper parts of the grass.

After sending the snail on its way, Zetty suddenly reached out and hugged Jenson around the neck, cooing happily, "Thanks, Big Brother." 

Surprised by Zetty's enthusiasm, Jenson was at a loss. He had never liked being touched by strangers. He could not handle it when other people touched his clothes, let alone such close contact.

If this was back then, Jenson would definitely have gone amok and shoved this person away. However, as he was being hugged by Zetty. As her older brother, Jenson felt that he should not bully his younger sister, so if she wanted to hug then he would allow it.

On top of that, he found that he did not really dislike his little sister hugging him.

After releasing the embrace, Zetty reached out her fingers and grabbed Jenson's hand as she walked toward the classroom. She skipped around gleefully as she said, "Baby Robbie, Mommy doesn't have to go to work today, so she'll come to pick us up on time after class, right?"

Jenson's brows furrowed and he corrected Zetty firmly, "Call me Big Brother."

Zetty pouted and stared and Jenson with a confused look. "You never said anything when I called you Baby Robbie last time. Why do you want me to call you Big Brother today?"

Jenson had a cold look on his face as he

thought in his heart, 'Because I'm not Baby Robbie.' However, he said curtly, "It's rude."

Zetty was the most understanding angelic baby, so seeing that her brother was not happy, she immediately relented. "Okay, okay, if you don't like me calling your name, then I'll call you Big Brother from now on!"

Readers also enjoyed



If I Never Loved You

Marriage

Second Chance

True Love

51.4K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 39

Jenson paused slightly. If this was anyone else who had such a passive personality like Zetty's, Jenson would instantly look down on that person. However, Jenson strangely could not help but feel that his little sister was very adorable.

The brother and sister duo arrived in the classroom, and the teacher passed out drawing paper and pencils to all the children. Jenson drew a picture of his mommy. Perhaps it was due to Jenson's more reserved personality, for his talent in the field of drawing far exceeded that of Baby Robbie's and Zetty's ever since he was young.

Gazing admiringly at Big Brother's flawless drawing of Mommy, Zetty pleaded with Jenson, "Big Brother, the Mommy you drew is so pretty. Could you draw one for me too?"

Jenson nodded. "Uh-huh."

Upon collecting their work, the teacher

was extremely surprised to see Jenson's drawing. "Baby Robbie, you've improved a lot."

As a reward, the teacher gave "Baby Robbie" an extra packet of Oreo cookies.

Jenson instantly gave the cookies to Zetty. "Do you like these?"

Zetty gleefully accepted the offering and tore open the packet. She stuffed the first piece into Jenson's mouth. "You eat first, Big Brother."

Then, Zetty shared the remaining cookies with the other kids. When it came to her turn, there were no more cookies left, yet Zetty said happily, "Mommy said that good things must be shared with friends."

The other kids then all took out the delicious snacks they kept in their bags to share with Zetty.

Jenson and Zetty spent a very pleasant day at the kindergarten.

When school ended, heavy thoughts weighed Jenson down. He was about to see Mommy very soon. Would Mommy

recognize him? If she did, would she welcome his presence?

After all, Baby Robbie was such a likable child.

Between him and Baby Robbie, Mommy would definitely choose Baby Robbie, would she not?

In order to prevent Mommy from recognizing him, when Jenson saw Rose, he made an effort to squeeze out his brightest smile.

Rose did not sense anything amiss and brought the two kids home without incident.

After experiencing the thrilling new school life, Jenson was a little worried Baby Robbie would not be able to handle those bullying classmates of his. He secretly sent Baby Robbie a text to check up on him.

“How are things over at your side?”

Baby Robbie replied almost in an instant, sounding pleased with himself. “I’m very good. I helped you teach those little

bullies a lesson, and I even got Daddy to get that sharp-eyed teacher of yours fired.”

The corners of Jenson’s mouth lifted in a smile.

At night, Jay brought his son to Grandpa and Grandma’s house, as promised.

To welcome “Jenson”, Grandpa and Grandma had prepared many delicious fruits and snacks on the coffee table.

Dinner was an extravagant affair. The long dining table was fully laden with dishes.

The unmarried Aunt Josephine lounged lazily on the couch, giving cold comments without reservation. “Dad, Mom, you two old folks should take a break. The food you guys made have the exotic taste of mountains and seas. But Jenson won’t eat a bite, even if it’s out of courtesy. I just don’t understand. Why don’t you get the housekeeper to cook? What’s the point of doing it personally if you need that little prince’s stamp of approval?”

Jay looked at “Jenson” and said sternly, “

Jens, Aunt Josephine has a point. Grandpa and Grandma have reached a great age and still personally made your meal. You have to be polite and eat a little, alright?"

Baby Robbie looked at the table full of delectable dishes. Thinking of how these were all personally made for him by his elderly grandpa and grandma, Baby Robbie was so moved his eyes reddened.

He ran up to Grandpa and Grandma, bending his waist in a deep bow to the two elders. "Thank you for the dinner you made me, Grandpa and Grandma. I really like it."

Jenson was normally stony and silent. He hid his likes and dislikes in his heart, stowing his emotions away.

Baby Robbie's actions amazed everyone so much that their eyeballs nearly popped out of their sockets.

Chapter 40

Josephine jumped up from the sofa with shock. She grabbed Baby Robbie's cheeks without warning, rubbing and pinching them. "Wait a minute, is this really our little distrustful and cynical Jenson?"

Baby Robbie did not look annoyed or angry at Josephine's manhandling. Instead, he flashed an innocent smile at her.

Josephine yelped with surprise, "Jay, I'm pretty sure that your son has been kidnapped."

Jay slapped the back of Josephine's head and reprimanded her coolly, "You should stop reading those absurd novels of yours. The things you say are becoming more and more ridiculous."

Although Grandpa and Grandma could not openly agree with Josephine's dubious statement, they too felt that their grandson had been taken away.

When they were having their meal,

Grandpa and Grandma heaped a lot of food in Baby Robbie's bowl but the boy did not object in the slightest. Instead, he politely thanked the elderly couple. "

Thank you, Grandpa. Thank you, Grandma."

Although "Jenson" was being cute and amiable, Jay could feel that something was amiss.

The whole family probably got used to Jenson's indifference. It was understandable that they did not know how to handle the boy as he was now. The cool baby Jenson that kept people at a thousand-mile distance seemed to have changed into the loveable baby who could cause any flower he passed to blossom.

The exception was Josephine!

Grandpa and Grandma were mentally affected by their good grandson's extreme personality change. Out of the blue, Grandpa started to scold his son, "Jay, don't work too hard every day. How did Jenson suddenly become this way? Do you know why?"

Jay looked at "Jenson" who was head deep into the bowl eating. That uncharacteristically self-reliant "Jenson" scared him a little. Nevertheless, "Jenson" was right in front of him. His clear eyes that looked like the sea, his nose as straight and tall as the mountains... Intelligent as he was, he still could not figure out an explanation for his son's sudden change.

Baby Robbie heard the adults' conversation and enjoyed a private laugh. 'Daddy, don't you know that you have two sons?'

On the other hand, Josephine liked the new Jenson very much. She patted Baby Robbie's head and encouraged "Jenson" to carry on. "Oh my, what a surprise. Polite words coming out from our very own Jenson. Jenson, tell me. Who cured your autism? I want to repay the person."

Sending an opportunity to cost the rift between Daddy and Mommy, Baby Robbie decided to employ his silver tongue to set up a meeting for his parents.

"It was Rose. Rose told me that this world was big but there aren't many good people in it. So we have to be grateful to those who treat us kindly. Rose is the nanny Daddy employed for me, Grandpa and Grandma. Not only is she beautiful, but she's also very gentle. She can paint, program, and even build Legos... There's nothing in this world that she can't do." Baby Robbie heaped lavish praises on Rose rather exaggeratedly.

When Grandpa, Grandma, and Josephine heard Rose's name as they sat across Baby Robbie, they lost their grips on their chopsticks, which clattered onto the table. The news of Rose being alive shocked them.

"Jay, is it true what Jenson said?" Grandpa asked hushedly.

At the mention of Rose, Jay's good mood evaporated instantly. He nodded curtly. "Yes."

The meal continued and ended in deep silence.

Grandpa stood up and said to Jay, "Come upstairs with me. I have something to tell you."

Jay followed his father to the study. The old man sat on his mahogany round-backed armchair. After a long sigh, he stared at his son intently and said in a rather nagging tone, "Jay, I know you don't like her, but she's Jenson's biological mother after all. You can see the changes she brought to Jenson yourself. That's the result of maternal love that no other woman can give. Please, I hope you can bury the hatchet and consider taking her back in."

Readers also enjoyed



Passionately Devoted to Loving...

Marriage

Love-Triangle

Manipulative

122.0K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 41

Jay put his foot down without hesitation. "Dad, she already has a new family and her own kids. She won't be able to give Jenson her undivided maternal love. Please don't tell Jenson that she's his mother. Don't bring his hopes up just to disappoint him."

The old man looked at the angry look on his son's face and persisted, "Jay, even if you hate her, she's still Jenson's mother. The love between a mother and her child can never be severed. Why don't you open up your heart and let them know each other? For Jenson's sake."

When Jay left the old man's study, he felt more disoriented than ever.

It was very late when they left Grandpa and Grandma's house. Jay walked out of the villa, holding Baby Robbie with one arm. Baby Robbie waved goodbye to Grandpa and Grandma enthusiastically. "Goodbye, Grandpa. Goodbye, Grandma. Goodbye, Aunt Josephine."

After bidding his farewells, Baby Robbie hugged Daddy's neck. 'Daddy's so strong. He can pick me up with one arm,' he thought wonderingly. Baby Robbie was enjoying the feeling of having a daddy.

"Daddy, I want an up up!" Baby Robbie had always envied other children riding on their daddy's shoulders. Finally, he had the opportunity to experience it himself.

Jay's face tightened up slightly, "Did Rose teach you that?"

Baby Robbie nodded. "Yep."

Jay considered Rose's petite body. 'Having a five-year-old Jenson ride on her shoulders must have worn her out.'

Little did he know, the last time Baby Robbie asked for "up up" from Mommy was a long time ago.

"Come on." Jay placed Baby Robbie on the ground and his slender figure squatted down. Baby Robbie jumped on his back and straddled his neck comfortably. ①

"Let's go!" Baby Robbie cheered happily.

At that moment, he was truly over the moon to have a daddy.

He secretly vowed that he would make the best Mommy in the world and the best Daddy in the world stay together forever. When that happened, the three of them would be the happiest children in the world.

"Daddy! Can I ask you for something..." Baby Robbie hugged Daddy's head and his voice suddenly softened. He was being almost unbearably cute.

"What is it?"

"Daddy, since you've fired Rose, she doesn't have a job anymore. Can you give her a job at your company?" Baby Robbie figured if Mommy worked in Daddy's company, she would have more opportunities to meet him.

Jay's face showed signs of reluctance. He did not want to be involved with Rose anymore.

Baby Robbie's cutesy act intensified. "Daddy, please. Rose helped me a lot. She

really is nice to me. If I don't help her, I won't be able to look at myself in the mirror."

Jay was helpless under his son's guise. "Alright, Daddy will find her a job, but not in Daddy's company."

"Why not?"

"She lacks education and working experience. Grand Asia just isn't the type of company that recruits newcomers without qualified working experience."

Jay said flatly.

Baby Robbie began fussing. "Daddy, you're wrong," he pouted. "Rose has good qualifications. She graduated at the top of her class at First Academy. She knows a lot of things."

Chapter 42

Jay felt like he just heard a tremendous joke, his cold and handsome face freezing on the spot.

‘Rose, a top student at First Academy?’

‘She should take a good look at herself in the mirror before spewing such nonsense. Each and every student from First Academy is an outstanding person.’

‘How could she lie to Jenson like that?’

"Jenson," Jay spoke in a level voice, "even if she's a First Academy graduate, her professional knowledge and proficiency cannot meet the requirements to become a Grand Asia employee. Daddy can't admit her exceptionally because it'll be unfair to other candidates."

Jay was appalled by Rose's shameless lies, but he still felt reluctant to outright defame Rose in front of "Jenson".

It was his way of protecting his son—he did not want to be the one to shatter the

beautiful image of Mommy in his heart.

Baby Robbie was very confident in Mommy's ability. He persevered and begged Jay, "Daddy, believe me. Rose is really good. Please let her work at your company? Pretty please?"

Jay was befuddled. "Jenson" had never begged him for anything. It was such a rare event, and there was so much sincerity in his plea, that Jay could not bring himself to reject his son's fragile heart.

He thought for a while before he finally conceded. "Alright. Daddy will give her a call tomorrow and invite her to apply for the company, how does that sound?"

Baby Robbie cheered happily, "Woohoo!"

Jay murmured to himself thoughtfully, 'Even if I smacked the job advertisement right on top of her face, would she be bold enough to apply?'

To prevent "Jenson" from being disappointed, Jay deliberately lowered his expectation first.

"Jenson, Daddy can only give her the chance to apply for Grand Asia. Whether or not she can land a spot Grand Asia will all depend on her performance. If she does not pass the stages, don't be too disappointed. Daddy can make an arrangement for her to work in my friend's company, okay?"

"Jenson" showed unwavering trust in Rose. "Daddy, don't worry, Rose will definitely get through the tests."

Baby Robbie thought about it privately. His hacking knowledge came from Mommy. If he was able to easily compromise Grand Asia's network, it meant that the technical personnel responsible for network security in Grand Asia were no match for Mommy.

Jay shook his head helplessly and sighed when he saw his son's immense confidence in Rose.

'Rose is just an illegitimate girl from the countryside. Even the university she attended was just an ordinary local college. I don't know what kind of ideas

she's been putting in Jenson's head to make him so obsessed with her.

'But maybe...'

He should uncover her facade to prove that a woman like her who cooked lies to curry favor with a kid was ultimately nothing but talk. Finally, Jenson would be able to see the truth about her. He wanted to teach Jenson not to be obsessed over someone's outer appearance and illusion.

After Baby Robbie returned to the villa, he sneaked out while his dad was asleep and secretly sent a voice message to Jenson via his smartwatch. "Make sure Mommy accepts the job interview for Grand Asia."

After Jenson received the message, he gave a little smile. "Roger that!" he sent back.

The next day.

Splendid Town.

When Rose woke up, she found a watercolor painting on the bed. It was a germinating seed that came out of the ground, under the wind and rain. In the

background, there was a woman's back leaving the little plant.

When Rose saw the painting, she could not help but think about poor Jenson. Suddenly, tears started flowing out of her eyes.

For a child without his mother, even if he could live an extravagant life, he would be just like this forgotten seed. Having to go through many hardships of the weather right after breaking out of the ground.

The thought of the motherless Jenson was absolutely heartbreaking.

At that moment, Jenson quietly walked over and stood silently beside Mommy's bed, looking at her intently.

Chapter 43

He did not mean to make Mommy cry but he had agreed with Baby Robbie to convince Mommy to apply for Grand Asia.

Jenson was not too sure how to go about it so he tried to give Mommy a subtle hint through his drawing, trying to convey how much he needed Mommy.

He hoped that Mommy would understand the message behind the painting and it would prompt her to accept Grand Asia's recruitment application.

At that moment, Jay tried to call her. Rose glanced at the unfamiliar number on her phone's screen and ignored it.

"Mommy, your phone!" Jenson piped up, handing the phone to Mommy.

The unknown number on the caller ID was very familiar to Jenson. He already knew who was calling on the other line. It was a call from Daddy.

Jenson helpfully brought Rose's mobile

phone and handed it to her. Not wanting to disappoint her son, she picked up the phone and connected the line.

"Rose..."

When Jay's icy voice was heard on the other line, Rose jumped slightly.

"Are you interested in applying for Grand Asia?" Jay's voice said in a flat tone.

"Apply for Grand Asia?" Rose was astonished. If she received this offer as Angeline, it would not be a surprise.

However, she was Rose now! In Jay's head, she was a vulgar housewife devoid of decent education!

"Sir Ares, why are you doing this?" Rose wondered why Jay was being nice to her all of a sudden.

Jay said tersely, "Jenson asked me to."

Rose was stunned. Why did Jenson suddenly think of finding a job for her? Was he worried that she was unemployed after she was fired by his father?

'So it seems like Jenson has a soft

underbelly hidden under his cold facade.'

After waiting for ages for Rose's response, Jay was losing his patience and with a hint of anger entered his tone. "What's wrong? Are you too afraid to come?"

Before Rose could respond, Jay's sharp tongue lashed out again. "Next time, don't brag about your prowess in front of the child. You're asking for trouble. Rose, if you don't want to embarrass yourself, you can just explain to Jenson yourself why you won't be able to attend..."

Before he could finish his sentence, Rose immediately chimed in. "Rest assured, Sir Ares, I'll definitely be there."

Jay was speechless.

'This woman is the epitome of ignorance.'

"Rose, let me tell you something. If you think I'll make it easier for you, you're in for a real disappointment."

To his surprise, Rose's response was tough and gritty. "I've done a lot of things in life but I've never taken the easy

route.”

Jay's face twitched. ‘Did a dog steal the woman's idea of herself?’

"So, Miss Rose. What position are you applying for? The cleaning staff? I'm sorry, but I'm afraid that Grand Asia isn't short on cleaning staff."

‘Why is this person constantly looking down on me?’ Rose thought spitefully. She gritted her teeth. "Network security."

Jay's face darkened...

The entirety of Grand Asia's network security, be it for the broadcast department, electronics department, new media department, catering department, entertainment department... All the network security of Grand Asia throughout the entire country was the responsibility of Jay Ares.

Chapter 44

It seemed like Rose applying for a post directly under his department meant that she was not ready to give up on her old antics.

"Very well. Remember to report to the Human Resources Department in the Grand Asia headquarters at ten o'clock in the morning. I'll make sure the interviewers in the Human Resources Department give you a grand welcome." Jay gritted his teeth and emphasized the word "grand".

Rose could feel his heavy contempt over her phone. "Thank you very much, Sir Ares!" Even though she was terrified of what was to come, she still maintained her tough demeanor.

After she hung up the phone, Rose put on some light makeup.

Although it was a light and natural makeup, her porcelain white skin and soft facial features combined with a thin

layer of powder made her look particularly noble. Coupled with her hair tied into a high bun and her fancy light purple fishtail lace skirt, she was instantly reborn into a beautiful fairy-like creature.

Zetty took out Mommy's white Michael Kors bag. In a soft voice, she said sweetly, "Mommy, this bag suits today's makeup very well. Mommy looks just like a fairy. You look so beautiful."

Rose took the bag and gave Zetty a kiss. She winked at Zetty playfully and said, "Does Mommy look like a cleaning lady?"

Jay claimed that she was only qualified for Grand Asia's cleaning staff; she was eager to show him how very wrong he was.

Jenson was a bit worried. His Daddy's company had a strict recruitment standard which implied that only the competent ones would be promoted. The ones with merely passable abilities would only hang around as subordinates, and the weaker ones would be fired. Although

Mommy was very beautiful, he was not sure if her skills would catch Daddy's eye.

"Mommy, you should go now." Jenson was afraid that Mommy would be late—tardiness was never tolerated at Grand Asia. That was why he reminded Rose.

Rose looked at her watch. It was still early. "I have to send the two of you to kindergarten first."

Jenson immediately shot down the suggestion. He said firmly, "No. You should go to the interview now."

Rose was taken aback. Baby Robbie seemed to care a lot about her job. Rose walked over and rubbed "Baby Robbie's" head and asked dotingly, "Baby Robbie, do you want Mommy to work at Grand Asia that badly?"

"Baby Robbie" nodded his head feverishly. He most certainly wanted Mommy to work at Grand Asia as it would give Mommy and Daddy the opportunity to meet. That was both his and Baby Robbie's greatest wish.

Rose nodded. Although she did not know

why her son was being so particular and a little weird, she thought that perhaps he had simply matured and grown more sensible. He probably wanted her to go back to what she liked working in.

"Mommy won't let you down." Rose smiled.

When Rose rushed to Grand Asia's Human Resources Department, it was exactly ten o'clock.

The interviewers had braced themselves and been waiting for a long time. When Rose pushed open the door, the interviewers' eyes lit up.

A gust of wind blew gently as a fairy presented herself!

That was their first impression of Rose.

Rose walked gracefully and calmly toward the several interviewers with a charming and confident smile on her face. "A very good morning to all of you."

She spoke with perfectly received pronunciation that made her sound like a television presenter.

The interviewer looked at each other doubtfully, they wondered why the candidate seemed vastly different from what was described by Mr. Ares.

'Didn't he say that she was uneducated, vulgar, and untalented?'

"Your name?" an examiner asked curtly, suspecting that Rose had gone to the wrong place.

"Rose Loyle," Rose replied in the same clear voice.

"What position are you applying for?"

"Network security specialist."

The interviewer pointed to the computer beside them. "Miss Rose, this is the question specifically designed by Mr. Ares for you. If you can successfully access Grand Asia's website and hack into any computer in our headquarters, you pass."

Rose walked toward the computer and started working at once.

Chapter 45

Jay had underestimated her.

There were many computers in Grand Asia's headquarters. The computers for the service desk on the lower grounds simply did not have a solid defense system. With those kinds of set up, even Zetty would be able to break through them easily.

Since he looked down on her, she was going to prove him wrong.

...

Jay was in the middle of a meeting and explaining something in detail when his laptop that was projected to the main screen suddenly blacked out.

"What happened?" Grand Asia's senior management team was present at the meeting. The technical difficulties were not a particularly big deal but having them in Grand Asia was not normal. Everyone started to panic a little.

Grayson was so anxious that he started sweating profusely. It was the second time Grand Asia was attacked by hackers within a month. Mr. Ares almost had him skinned alive for it the last time. He shuddered to imagine what Mr. Ares would do to him as a result of the second attack.

"Mr. Ares, I'll check it out immediately!" Grayson stammered.

Jay's gaze was fixed on his laptop. A bright spot suddenly appeared on the black screen. It looked as if it was coming from the distant horizon. Suddenly, it got closer and exploded like a million stars bursting in the vast interstellar space. Thousands of stars flickered and finally reformed into a few lines of poetry.

"If you're here, I'll go!

"If I'm here, you'll go!

"The only thing I can do is protect you from a distance..."

Jay's slightly brows furrowed and he barked, "Grayson, get the hacker's IP

address immediately!"

As soon as he said that, Grand Asia's hacker master stood up and announced, "Mr. Ares. I've found the hacker's IP address. It came from downstairs."

As soon the words were spoken, everyone in the room looked ashen-faced.

Grayson sneered, "Interesting! What a bold person! Who dared to hack into our president's computer? And how dare that person act this atrociously in our building! I'll flush out this culprit!"

Grayson marched out of the room, pulling up his sleeves furiously.

Suddenly, Jay recalled something and a hint of incredulity swept over his face.

His eyes were locked on the laptop screen. At the next moment, the abstract and obscure poem slowly changed into an eerie font. The words formed morphed slowly and became more menacing.

"Sir Ares, I'm here."

Jay slammed his laptop shut, turned, and

stormed outside.

Downstairs in the Human Resources Department.

The interviewers were pale-faced when they saw that Rose had hacked into the president's computer. "Miss, how could you hack into Mr. Ares's computer? It's over for all of us now. Mr. Ares is having his meeting at this very moment. You've gone and done it this time."

When Rose heard that Mr. Ares was in a meeting and saw how scared the interviewers were, she gave a soft smile and said, "Didn't he say that I could hack any computer in the headquarter..."

When Jay entered the room, he heard the woman's innocent voice.

The moment Mr. Ares went into the room, the temperature in the room plummeted to freezing levels.

The interviewers could not stop wiping the cold sweat from their foreheads.

It seemed like they were sweating on Rose's behalf as well. 'How could she dare to

hack the president's computer! Is she not afraid of death?'

Jay's gaze landed on the computer in front of Rose. An expression of incredulity appeared on his handsome face. "Was it really you?" he hissed. ①

VAMP20 WORKS

Rose's makeup was natural, refined, fresh, and professional. It was also a little elegant and that caught Jay off guard for the slightest of moments.

'I didn't expect the woman from the boonies to clean up so well... If I must say, she looks quite pleasing,' he thought.

Rose looked at Jay tentatively, not having a single clue as to what was going to happen to her.

She thought that she should at least take the initiative. "Sir Ares, I was told that I could hack into any computer in the headquarters. I had no idea that you were in a meeting. I've done nothing wrong. You can't fault me for merely following orders."

Jay straightened his back. He was a highly principled person who valued commitment. Although he was not happy with the result, Rose's ability gave him no reason to reject her.

Jay held out the various position tags toward Rose. "You can have any of these

positions. Make your choice.”

Rose felt as if she had won five million dollars in a lottery. She was so stunned that she forgot how to reach her hand out.

After holding up the tags for quite some time, Jay unceremoniously tossed the tags on the table. He really had no patience when he had to deal with her.

Finally returning to her senses, Rose hastily picked up a position tag to take a better look. When she saw that the position offered was that of the president's assistant, she glanced at the man opposite her with a pang of guilt in her heart.

Jenson's helpless and pitiful face swam into her mind. 'If I become his assistant, I'll have more chances to see Jenson.'

However, she still did not know exactly how much Jay detested her.

She clutched the tag and her thoughts began spiraling.

'Between the father and son, I can only help one person after all, huh?'

"I choose this one." Rose pointed to the position of the president's assistant. She gritted her teeth, ready to risk everything.

Jay's hawkish gaze landed on the tag under Rose's long, jade-like fingers.

When he read the words "Assistant to the President", any remaining pleasantness on his face completely vanished.

"And what makes you think you're qualified for this position?" Jay hissed coldly.

Rose heard his contempt but she could only answer it as if he was an actual interviewer. "I believe that I possess hacking skills surpassing the ordinary and I also have excellent managing capabilities. That, I feel, qualifies me for the position of assistant to the president."

Jay looked at Rose's clear eyes. Whenever she lied, her eyes flickered and the guilt was written on her face. Despite being a compulsive liar, she looked sincere when talking about business. Jay found the extraordinary sense of confidence that filled her eyes very alluring.

He was a little confused. 'Where did she learn such great workplace skills?'

"I want the details of your work experience over the past few years," Jay said quietly.

Rose knew she had no reason to refuse his question. She should have provided her resume. It was a normal thing for the president to know about his new employee's past experiences.

However, it was exactly this question that stumped Rose.

She bowed her head in embarrassment. "I have no work experience," she muttered.

She was telling the truth. Her hacking skills were a boon from Angeline's memories. Angeline was the top student in First Academy where she majored in network security. Even though Rose received this gift of an ability, she had not used it to look for jobs in reputable companies.

Chapter 47

Jay's eyes narrowed as he pondered about what he knew of Rose's secret.

A few years ago, he hired someone to investigate her. She could not have faked her poor education. Her major in college was literature and journalism. It was totally irrelevant to network security.

So how did she learn this remarkable hacking technique?

Rose realized that if she did not give him a clear reply, Jay's suspicion toward her would not end. If he got someone to investigate her because of that, he might discover Baby Robbie and Baby Zetty. If that happened, Rose felt that her losses would outweigh her gains.

"I was self-taught," Rose said abruptly.

Jay stared directly at her eyes and confusion filled his head. "You got this good from learning it yourself?" he asked disbelievingly.

A third-rate junior college student with mediocre qualifications taught herself how to hack and managed to hack his computer?

'Could it be that she's a genius in disguise?'

Jay gazed searchingly at Rose's eyes. Her long, curled eyelashes trembled gently. He was sure. Was she lying again?

"Remember to come to work on time next Monday." Jay finally spoke after a long silence.

He seemed to have developed a tiny spark of interest in that woman.

Rose breathed a sigh of relief.

After the interview, Rose did not linger and left Grand Asia at once.

Jay turned on the surveillance monitor. His eyes were locked on the screen as he stared at the back of Rose's graceful and calm body, doubt creeping into his face.

Did he not take a good look at her before? Or was she like a butterfly that had just

broken out of her cocoon; her beauty and grace all emerging at once?

Why could he not shake off the feeling that she was completely different from the last time he knew her?

...

At Grand Asia's entrance, Baby Robbie sat on the leather sofa in the waiting room. Out of nervousness, he rubbed his tiny hands constantly as he glanced at the elevator's direction from time to time.

When he knew Mommy came to apply, he could not wait to see her. He would be able to see his Mommy soon. However, he had to remind himself that Mommy saw him as Jenson so he had to pretend to be quiet and cold. Otherwise, his astute Mommy would recognize him immediately.

When Rose walked out of the elevator, Baby Robbie rushed toward Mommy like a soft bullet. He had not seen Mommy in two whole days. 'I miss Mommy so much!'

Baby Robbie held Rose's head tightly. He

had a lot to say to Mommy but he dared not say too much lest he blew his cover. 1

Rose happily returned the right hug to Baby Robbie.

"Baby Robbie." Rose held the boy's small face in her hands and asked gently, "Why are you here?"

Baby Robbie was dumbfounded. Did Mommy recognize him already? How?

Jay saw the encounter between "Jenson" and Rose through the monitor and stormed out of the office with a darkened face.

"Jenson!"

Just as Rose was about to bring Baby Robbie home, Jay suddenly appeared in front of them.

Rose went pale. She immediately hid Baby Robbie behind her and guarded him like a lieutenant in a hurry.

She had already given Jenson to him. There was no way she would hand Baby Robbie to him too!

Chapter 48

Jay's eyes narrowed menacingly when he saw Rose covering "Jenson" like a hen protecting her chicks.

He felt a flick of annoyance, Jenson was his son, after all. 'Who does she think she is, taking Jenson from me?'

"Come over here, Jenson." Jay reached out and tried to take "Jenson" away.

Baby Robbie drooped his head. The order was hard for him to obey.

It stood to reason that his current identity was "Jenson" and he should follow Daddy.

However, Mommy recognized him as Baby Robbie and Mommy would never let him be abducted by Daddy. Daddy and Mommy were competing over him, what was he to do?

Rose held Baby Robbie tightly in her arms without showing any signs of releasing him.

She was afraid that when Baby Robbie

was brought back to the Ares household, Jay would find out that he had two sons.

When that time came, he was going to take both Jenson and Baby Robbie away and she would lose both of her sons.

That was absolutely unacceptable to her.

"Jenson?" Jay's eyes were puzzled.

'Even if Jenson liked Rose a lot, would he abandon his actual father for her?' he thought.

'And Jenson isn't even aware that Rose is his Mommy yet! It doesn't make sense for him to depend on Rose so much!'

Baby Robbie looked at Daddy's increasingly cold eyes and then Mommy's gleaming ones. He was a filial baby and did not want Daddy and Mommy to be unhappy by fighting over him.

Baby Robbie thought he might as well get out of Mommy's arms. He clutched his stomach and lied, "Ouch, my stomach hurts. I need to go to the bathroom."

After that, he ran desperately toward the

bathroom with his short, stumpy legs.

Rose was still worried about Baby Robbie and wanted to stay close to him.

However, Jay casually blocked her way with her long legs. He said coolly, "He went to the men's toilet. Are you going there too?"

Rose choked and could not find her words.

"I'm going to wait for him outside the toilet." Rose stuttered.

Jay gnashed his teeth. "He's my son. Rose, you're no longer his nanny. You have neither the right nor the obligation to intervene with Jenson's business."

"But he..." Rose looked up. She wanted to announce that that boy was her Baby Robbie, not his Jenson. However, she did not dare to reveal the truth.

Under Jay's deadly gaze, Rose was utterly defeated.

Jay walked toward the bathroom.

Baby Robbie was coming out of the bathroom when he was caught by Jay. Jay'

s big hands grabbed one of his small ones and he marched them upstairs.

Rose was frozen in place, a look of helplessness on her face.

When Baby Robbie glanced back and took in Mommy's sorry appearance, he was absolutely devastated.

Jay threw Baby Robbie into his office and asked Grayson to look after the child while he hurried to finish the rest of the meeting.

Grayson was none too pleased but he did not have the courage to disobey the president's orders.

Thus, he ended up sitting nervously in front of the "little devil".

Baby Robbie blinked harmlessly at Grayson, trying to figure the man out. He needed to get rid of the stunned and timid man; he was anxious about Mommy and he needed to see her at once.

"Mister, if my daddy comes back and finds me missing, how will he punish you?" Baby Robbie flashed a cute

expression while he tried to chat with Grayson.

"If you're gone, your daddy will probably make me disappear from the face of this earth," Grayson exclaimed exasperatedly, staring at Baby Robbie with frustration. Grayson did not even dare to blink for fear that Jay's little son would magically disappear into thin air if he did.

Readers also enjoyed



The Young Wife is Pregnant: Pa...

Marriage

Sweet

President

99.1K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 49

"If you magically disappeared, how would Daddy punish me?" Baby Robbie continued asking innocently.

Grayson was caught off guard by his question. "If I disappeared," he said grimly, "Mr. Ares probably won't give it much thought."

Baby Robbie's bright eyes blinked. "Oh, so it's better for you to disappear."

Grayson eyed Baby Robbie suspiciously. "Hmm. Did the sun rise from the West today? You look a little different today, Master Jenson."

Baby Robbie got up from the sofa and walked toward Grayson with his arms outstretched. There was a faint smile on his face.

"Mister, is it because I've been talking a lot today?"

"Not just that, but your face also looks more expressive today," Grayson said

thoughtfully.

Baby Robbie continued walking toward him. "Mister, if you raise your hands, there will be another surprise!"

Grayson slowly raised his hands without question. Suddenly, Baby Robbie pulled off his tie and bound Grayson's hands behind his neck with it.

"Master Jenson, what are you doing?" Grayson yelped.

"Don't be afraid, mister. I'm just playing a game with you." Baby Robbie pulled out some rope from the office and tied Grayson up like a rice dumpling.

"Jenson, what are you trying to do?"

"Mister, we're simulating an escape room game. I'll give you half an hour and you'll have to find a way to untie the rope within this duration. Tell me, can you do it?"

"Jenson's" face was innocent and harmless as if he would never hurt a fly. Grayson looked at that face and nodded curtly. "I can do that."

Baby Robbie found a roll of tape and Grayson felt that the situation was escalating. He was starting to get a little scared. "Master Jenson, what are you going to do?"

Baby Robbie said airily, "Since we're doing a simulation, we should make everything as realistic as possible." With those words, he taped Grayson's mouth shut mercilessly.

Baby Robbie dragged Grayson toward the back of the sofa with all his strength. He looked at the watch on his wrist. He maintained the act. "It's ten minutes to eleven—the time starts now."

Done with his elaborate spiel, Baby Robbie stealthily pushed the office door open and left the room.

Grayson had been neatly tied up like a rice dumpling by "Jenson". His hands and feet were bound and all he could do was stay where he was and panic. The walls in Grand Asia's building were soundproof—nobody could hear Grayson's incessant slams on the ground.

Twenty minutes passed!

Jay had just finished his meeting and returned to his office. When he found Grayson worming on the ground, Jay froze up.

The bodyguard following Jay stepped forward and tore off the tape on Grayson's mouth.

"Mr. Ares..." Grayson gasped, exhausted.

Jay's sharp eagle-like eyes swept across every corner of the office but did not find Jenson. Immediately, he had a bad feeling. "Where's Jenson?"

Grayson looked distressed and could not curse the devilish "Jenson" even if he wanted to. He said miserably, "Mr. Ares, Master Jenson told me he wanted to simulate an escape room game with me. He tied me up like a rice dumpling and ran away!"

Jay immediately turned on the computer monitor to examine the surveillance footage. On the screen, he saw "Jenson" running out from Grand Asia's building.

When he realized that "Jenson" must have been chasing Rose, his heart plummeted.

"What's the point of keeping you if you can't even take care of a child?" he spat.

When Grayson regained his mobility, he sat timidly on the floor with his head down. He realized that Master Jenson had played him for a fool. Utterly dejected, he tried to justify himself. "Mr. Ares, Master Jenson premeditated this plan to escape."

"Shut up," Jay snapped mercilessly.

All Grayson could do was keep silent and suck it up—he could not even defend himself!

Chapter 50

After Baby Robbie left Grand Asia behind, he immediately called Jenson on his smartwatch and briefed Jenson about what happened—the way Daddy and Mommy were fighting over him from the beginning to the end.

When he was done, he anxiously asked Jenson for his opinion. "Jenson, what do you think I should do now? Mommy seems to have recognized me. She must think that Daddy took me away. I bet Mommy's really sad right now."

Jenson thought for a moment before he said, "Let's switch back."

Baby Robbie realized what Jenson meant after a long pause. "You mean switching back to our own identities?"

"Yeah. It's the only way to make Mommy and Daddy less suspicious." Jenson said firmly.

"I guess this is the only way now," said

Baby Robbie. "I'll return to Splendid Town right now and you go back to Horizon Colors."

"Okay."

As the two kids planned their next move, both Jay and Rose were having their meltdowns simultaneously.

Rose was shuddering at the possibility of losing Baby Robbie forever.

On the other hand, Jay was completely distraught as it seemed that Jenson preferred his biological mother whom he had only known for a few days over his father.

Jay was the first to call Rose. As soon as Rose answered the call, Jay's overbearing voice reverberated throughout her eardrum. "Rose, I'm giving you one hour to return Jenson to me."

"What? Jenson's missing?"

The news was tantamount to finding out about the death of a beloved family member to Rose. Suddenly, all her elegance and gracefulness went out of the

window.

She shrieked at Jay, "You lost the child and now you're blaming me? I'm the one who's supposed to ask you where the child went!"

Jay thrust the phone away from his ear; Rose's angry voice was like a bolt of lightning that pierced the night sky, disappearing as soon as it came.

Rose quickly calmed down, realizing it was not Jenson who was missing but her Baby Robbie.

Even though Baby Robbie was a kid, he was used to being outside; his memory was definitely good enough to find his way back to Splendid Town.

When Rose remembered that, she was able to set her mind at ease.

However, she now felt a little uneasy that she shouted at Jay.

After all, Jay was not just some random person. He was her superior.

"Sir Ares, don't worry too much," Rose

said gently. "The child's probably just having some fun outside. He'll be back home sooner than you think." Rose's strong attitude took a 180 turn as she gave Mr. Ares comforting words.

"Jenson has never been alone outside!" Jay snapped coldly.

"Although Jenson has never been alone outside, he's a very smart boy. He's played tons of games with maps and I'm sure he won't get lost."

Jay did not want to hear another word from Rose so he hung up and ordered Grayson to send someone to search for Jenson immediately.

However, nobody was able to find him.

When evening came around, Jay returned to the villa and rubbed his temples exasperatedly.

Suddenly, he saw a familiar figure squatting by the door—none other than Jenson himself.

"Jenson." Jay stepped forward and hugged Jenson tightly in his arms.

Jenson did not move and his stiff body allowed Daddy to hug him.

"Where did you go?" Jay asked.

Jenson remained silent. However, there was a noticeable trace of guilt beneath his bright and star-like eyes of his as he stared at Daddy.

Jay realized that Jenson was especially quiet today and looked at him, puzzled. 'Wasn't Jenson lively and cheerful just two days ago? Why did he revert to his quiet demeanor today?

'Is it Rose again?'

Jay could not help but be reminded that everything boiled down to one person.

"Did you look for Rose?" he asked.

Jenson nodded.

Jay held Jenson's little hand and sighed weakly. He thought just having Daddy was enough for Jenson. He did not expect that his world would collapse the moment Rose stepped foot in it.

Jay opened the door, led Jenson by his

little hand, and brought him inside. He sat Jenson down on the sofa facing him. He embraced Jenson and decided to open up to him.

"You like Rose?"

Jenson nodded.

"Can you tell Daddy why you like her so much?" Jay was curious about what method Rose had used to please the child that much.

Over the past five years, many women approached the kid but were unable to do everything. Even spending ample money and skills to please Jenson got them nowhere.

Jenson tilted his head and thought seriously about how to answer his question.

"She's nice to me," Jenson said.

Although he did not show it, Jenson was very observant and was a good judge of character.

He could tell that Rose was sincerely nice

to him. She was the only person who would risk everything to hug him when he was on a rampage.

Jay hugged Jenson. 'This kid lacks maternal love. That's why any tiny bit of affection she showed meant a great deal to him.

'This is not a good sign!'

"Jenson, it's the weekend tomorrow. Daddy asked Miss Nancy to come to play with you at home. I like her, so you need to be friendly with her, alright?" Jay thought it was time to give Jenson a stepmother.

He believed that Jenson would approve of the gentle and virtuous Nancy Bell more than Rose Loyle, as long as he gave her a chance.

"You don't like her," Jenson said abruptly.

Jay was caught off guard. Indeed, it was true that he did not like Nancy, but she was objectively the best-suited person for him.

Since they grew up together, they knew

everything about each other. Moreover, he did not have the time and energy to cultivate a new relationship with another stranger. After all, he knew that his true love was dead.

"You're just a kid, what do you know?" Jay laughed awkwardly.

However, Jenson said very seriously, "You always call out a woman's name when you get drunk. Her name's Angeline."

Jay froze.

Even after six years, his love for Angeline had not faded. Instead, it aged like fine wine, becoming stronger over time.

"I'll only agree to it if you decide to marry Angeline," Jenson blurted.

Jay sighed and pinched Jenson's nose. "She'll never come back."

Jenson was dumbfounded.

Jay continued, "Daddy will marry Miss Nancy and she'll treat you well."

Jenson shook his head and protested. "

You're going to have your own kids with her and you'll only take care of them."

Readers also enjoyed



Mr. Holt, You Are My Ineffable L...

Marriage

Sweet

Boss / CEO

32.1K readers Recommend Reading

VAMP20 WORK



Sir Ares, Goodnight!

Yan An

Language: English

Even after two lifetimes, Rose still could not melt the ice-cold heart of Jay Ares. Heartbroken, she decides to live under the guise of an idiot, tricking him and running away with their two children. This infuriates Sir Ares to no end, and everyone around them is certain that this will prove to be Rose's ultimate demise. However, upon the next day, the great Sir Ares is seen getting down on one knee in the middle of the street, coaxing the little brat, "Please be good and come home with me!" "I will, but only if you agree to my terms!" "Speak your mind!" "You are not allowed to bully me, lie to me, and especially not show your displeased face at me. You must always regard me as the most beautiful person, and you must smile whenever I cross your mind..." "Fine!" Onlookers are floored at sight of this! Is this the myth of how there is a



Read

Chapter 51

'He sounds exactly like Rose! I can't believe Rose would plant these sorts of ideas into his head!

'Rose is nothing short of a horrible woman.'

"Who told you that?" Jay said, his temper rising slightly.

When Jenson saw the furious look on Daddy's face, he stopped talking because he knew Daddy would only get angrier.

Jay mistakenly pinned the fault on Rose.

The next day, Nancy came to Jenson's house as scheduled. She brought many gifts and clothes for Jenson.

"Thank you, Miss Nancy," Jay said politely.

"Jay, you're too kind," Nancy purred. "Jenson's so cute. Of course, it's my pleasure to take care of him."

Jenson sat down next to Jay sullenly, his

gaze landing on the pile of luxury clothing Nancy bought for him...

When Nancy saw him staring, she quickly asked Jenson, "Jens, do you like the clothes I bought for you?"

Jenson remembered the simple and comfortable t-shirts in Baby Robbie's closet, as well as the colorful patterns on the clothes. Although those articles of clothing were more on the wallet-friendly side, he felt more comfortable in them after wearing them for those two days. As he eyed the pile of luxury clothing with complicated designs, he frowned and shook his head.

Immediately, Nancy looked dejected and looked at Jay awkwardly. Jay stared suspiciously at Jenson. "Don't you always wear this style of clothes?"

Jenson said bluntly, "I don't like them."

Jay assumed that Jenson was prejudiced against Nancy so he decided to take it out on the clothes.

Although he loved Jenson, he was very

dissatisfied with Jenson's rude behavior and his ignorance of other people's kindness.

Jay's face immediately sank, "Jenson," he said severely, "you shouldn't treat people who are kind to you with this attitude."

Jenson felt betrayed. 'Daddy must think I was lying on purpose.'

Nancy hurried to diffuse the tension. "It's okay. If Jens doesn't like these clothes, I'll buy you a different kind next time. But could you tell me what kind of clothes you like?"

When Nancy spoke, there was a twisted smile on her face.

She was sure that Jenson could not express what kind of clothing he liked; she would be able to prove that he was deliberately embarrassing her. She wanted to expose to Jay just how scheming Jenson was so that Jay would cease to be partial toward the boy in the future.

Jenson lowered his head and said nothing.

Jay's handsome brows furrowed and he was about to lose his temper, but Jenson suddenly raised his head and blurted, "Smart Baby Tiger!"

Nancy's face crumpled in an instant—she did not expect Jenson to actually announce a favorite clothing brand. 1

However, the quick-witted Nancy did not rule out that Jenson might simply be fooling her. After all, she had never heard of that clothing brand.

Nancy asked shamelessly, "Jens, is Smart Baby Tiger really a clothing brand?"

"Yeah." Jenson nodded.

Nancy immediately whipped out her phone and searched for it.

Jay looked at Jenson in disbelief. "You never used to care about what brands of clothes you wore!"

Jenson did not say anything, his clear eyes just gazed at Daddy innocently.

Chapter 52

Jenson simply had never worn clothes as cool and comfortable as Smart Baby Tiger before this.

After Nancy searched for Smart Baby Tiger's clothing, she handed her phone to Jay. When Jay saw the colorful children's clothing, he frowned. "Since when were you into this type of clothes? They're so garish!"

Jenson felt wronged. "I'm just a kid!" he said hotly.

Jay noted the clothing price tags that ranged from tens to hundreds of yuan. He looked suspiciously at Jenson. "Are you sure you want to wear such cheap clothes?"

Jenson nodded. He just wanted to wear clothes that cost the same as Baby Robbie's so that he would feel better.

Jay sighed with a contemptuous look on his face. "Daddy has never bought clothes

online."

Jenson retorted cheekily, "They're not for you."

Jay eyed Jenson. For as long as Jenson had been maturing, this was the first time he was so persistent about fighting for something he wanted.

Jay chose to compromise and tossed the phone toward Jenson. "Add everything you like into the cart, Daddy will pay for it."

Jenson took the phone over and picked out his clothes enthusiastically. He added everything in Baby Robbie's wardrobe into the shopping cart.

When Jay saw the shopping cart filled to the brim, his face darkened. He secretly cursed Rose for cheapening Jenson's taste.

Perhaps it was because it was the weekend, or perhaps it was because "Jenson" acted normal for the first time in the past two days, Aunt Josephine suddenly thought about him and decided to invite herself over to the house.

When she pushed open the door and saw Nancy, Josephine laughed awkwardly. "Hehe. Sorry to intrude."

Jay shot a look at her sister with his lips twitching slightly. "Didn't you vow that you would never step foot into this house?"

Josephine pointed at Jenson and said solemnly, "Jenson's autism is gone so my oath had also gone with the wind!"

The two were former enemies who fought whenever they met. That was why Josephine made the bold statement. She vowed to never step foot into Horizon Colors for the rest of her life unless it was absolutely necessary.

Obviously, Josephine did not know that Jenson had reverted into his former cold self. Otherwise, she would have never gone to the house, voluntarily searching for abuse.

"Jenson, Aunt Josephine came here to play with you," Jay said.

Jenson glanced at Josephine bitterly. "No.

" He refused flatly with a single word.

Josephine ran over to him and rubbed Jenson's face with both of her hands, a wide grin on her face. "Jenson, didn't you say that you like playing with your aunt that day? Let's go and play some chess." She dragged the reluctant Jenson upstairs into his room.

When Jenson arrived at his room, he opened the door but quickly slammed it shut with Josephine still outside his room.

The door knocked onto Josephine's head and a bruise formed on her forehead. She let out a terrible howl and cried, "Jenson, you evil demon. You disfigured your aunt's face! I won't let you get away with it."

Jenson said coldly from the inside, "You don't need your looks to get by."

"I want to be an actor! Of course, I need my looks! How else do you think I earn money?" Josephine shrieked angrily.

"Trust-fund baby!" Jenson yelled back.

Josephine was so angry that she almost lost her breath. "Did you just call me a

trust-fund baby? What about you? You're dependent on your old man too..."

"Daddy's not old," Jenson said.

Josephine was completely stifled.

Readers also enjoyed



Spoiled By The President: My W...

Romance

lovestory

Love

644.7K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 53

Josephine stormed downstairs with her hand over her bruised forehead. She walked toward Jay and cried pretentiously, "Jay, your son just bullied me and you're not going to do anything about it?"

Jay observed Josephine silently...

"You knew that he doesn't like you touching him," he said stiffly, "yet you continued to provoke him. You brought it upon yourself."

Josephine felt immensely aggrieved. "Well, I thought he got better. That's the only reason I came over to offer to look after him. I didn't know he was going to act out again."

Jay's handsome face darkened slightly. "Jenson's not sick."

Josephine said in a hushed voice, "You know very well whether he's sick or not. Jay, may I remind you that the original

Jenson was cold and arrogant? You've seen him with your own eyes that day when you brought him over to our house, he was like a completely different person! Lively, cheerful, gentle, and polite. I originally thought his mother had cured his autism but it seems like the situation has only gotten worse. Jenson jumps from being silent and antisocial to being an enthusiastic chatterbox. I'd even suspect he's schizophrenic!"

A dark shadow spread across Jay's handsome face.

"Jay, get a psychiatrist in Grand Asia Hospital to check Jenson out," Josephine urged him. "You shouldn't delay treatment for your child."

Jay rubbed the space between his eyebrows and fell into deep thought.

'Josephine's right. Jens has been acting very strangely these past few days.'

Nancy read the atmosphere and rushed to comfort Jay. "Jay, don't worry. It's normal for a child's mood to be unstable. Your sister's just confused because she's

concerned about him.”

Suddenly, Jenson ran down from the second floor. When Josephine saw Jenson, she recoiled like she saw her archenemy. “Jenson, I’ll go back home immediately, okay?” she said hurriedly. “I’m afraid of you so you don’t have to bother sending me off. Just go back upstairs!” With that, she bolted out of the house in fear.

“Josephine!” Jenson suddenly called out to her.

Josephine nearly slipped and fell. She looked back at Jenson and snapped, “Call me Aunt Josephine. Show some respect.”

Jenson said blandly, “Take me out to play.”

Josephine theatrically dug her ears. “Did I hear that right? The mighty grandson asking me to go out and play?”

Even though Josephine was an adult, she still had the innocence of a child. Her biggest wish was to take the coolest and most handsome nephew in the entire universe out and show him off to her

circle of friends until they exploded from envy.

However, Jenson was a cold child who never got along with her. He mostly refused to take pictures with her and during the rare times that he did, he would only offer the camera lens a cold death-stare. That usually gave people the impression that she was a child trafficker.

As such, it felt like the world had been overturned when Jenson requested her to take him out to play. Josephine could not help but feel that it was too sudden and too good to be true.

Jay stared at Jenson in amazement but his eyes were filled with doubt.

"Jenson, are you sure you want to hang out with your aunt?" Jay asked skeptically.

Jenson nodded.

"Do you promise to not quarrel, fight or hurt your aunt?" Jay pressed.

Jenson's eyed Josephine with a resentful look. "If she doesn't touch me or speak to me, I promise I won't," he said coolly.

Josephine protested, "I'm your aunt, not a puppet. I'm not mute either. I don't care whether you want to go or not. It's your choice."

To everyone's surprise, Jenson walked toward Josephine silently.

Josephine's striking eyes widened in shock. "Yo, Jenson, do you have a fever? You want to go out with your aunt despite what I said?"

Chapter 54

Jenson stared at her coldly and forced a curt nod.

Josephine happily hugged Jenson and cheered, "Jenson, you've changed. You've become cuter and cuter. I take back everything I said, you don't have autism or schizophrenia. You're the cutest kid in the entire world."

A disgusted look appeared on Jenson's handsome face.

"Jay, we're going to leave now."

"Come back early," Jay said, still unsure.

Josephine led Jenson out of the villa and into her red supercar. The enchanting young aunt felt like she was living a dream where her wishes came true.

Jenson's cold drawl interrupted her daydream. "I want to go to the amusement park."

Josephine's bright smile instantly froze. "

Why?"

Obviously, she was the elder here. Why should a little kid like Jenson tell her where to go?

"Jenson, I need to go to the movie production house first," Josephine replied, smiling. She had secretly made up her mind to trick Jenson to go to the production house no matter what. She was determined for those big players in the industry to see Jenson's natural movie-star face. Perhaps Jenson might even get a kickstart on his acting career and pull the rug beneath the rest of the current ambassadors.

Jenson stared at Josephine and spat out two words, "Human trafficker!"

Josephine stared at the little guy who had clearly seen through her intentions. "Wow, this kid's smart."

Jenson was seated in the passenger seat when Josephine poked his head with her finger.

Jenson insisted, "Go to the amusement

park."

Josephine matched his stubbornness. She turned the steering wheel forcefully. "No, I won't go to the amusement park."

Jenson rolled down the window. "Then I'll jump out."

Josephine instantly went as pale as a ghost. With a quick slam of the brake, the supercar did a gorgeous drift and screeched to a halt.

Josephine was terribly frightened. She got out of the car and pulled Jenson out to scold him. "You scared me to death, you know that? If something bad happened just now, what am I supposed to tell your Daddy?"

Jenson yelled angrily, "Take me to the amusement park!"

Josephine said exasperatedly, "You want to go to the amusement park but your aunt needs to go to the production house. Can't you compromise a little?"

Jenson said, "I made an appointment with someone and I'm not about to go

against my word.”

Josephine stared at Jenson; it was the first time she had ever heard him make plans with a friend.

“Jenson, who is this person?” Josephine had a nickname—The Excavator! Her specialty was digging up gossip and scandals of others.

Jenson snorted coldly, “Nosy hag.” After that, he turned and ran to the alley between some buildings opposite them.

Josephine tensed up. “Is he trying to get rid of me?”

Josephine was about to chase after him when she realized that her sports car was still parked by the roadside.

Josephine hesitated, then her eyes gleamed. “Hey kiddo,” she called out, “I’m going to give up my sports car if it means I get to dig up your little secret.” With that, she hurried after Jenson.

Chapter 55

After Jenson shrugged off Josephine, he jogged to the amusement park.

The person who had invited him to the amusement park was Baby Robbie. The two brothers were very much in-sync and even wore the same clothes. These were the few they had in the same style—a black Adidas t-shirt, white pants and sneakers. The difference was that Baby Robbie wore a hip hop-style duckbill hat.

“Jen—” Baby Robbie had spotted Jenson from afar and was just about to call out to him, but he then noticed a shifty woman following behind him.

The woman held a large straw hat in her hands and hid her entire head with it. She wore a bright red dress and kept a distance of about five meters from Jenson, using everything around to cover and hide. ①

Baby Robbie held up his smartwatch and sent a text to Jenson. “You’re being

followed by a woman in red.”

Jenson did not even have to turn his head to know this woman was his neurotic aunt.

“It’s Josephine Ares,” Jenson replied Baby Robbie.

Baby Robbie smiled slyly and sent him a voice message. “Jenson, didn’t you say she’s always bullying you? Want me to help you take revenge?”

The corners of Jenson’s lips lifted slightly. “Okay!”

“Then find a place to hide. I’ll make my move at once.”

After Jenson received Baby Robbie’s message, he headed for the restroom toward the side. Josephine was afraid she would lose Jenson, so she had to run to somewhere near the bathroom to stop him.

However, Jenson did not come back out for ages. The people who entered and exited the men’s room came and went, all deliberating Josephine with a weird look

in their eyes.

During these times, Josephine used the hat to cover her face, hating Jenson so much her heart itched.

“Aunt Josephine.” Suddenly, Baby Robbie popped up from the side. An overenthusiastic smile brimmed his face. 1

Josephine was transfixed. She had never seen Jenson smile so brilliantly. She had not realized Jenson would be so cute and handsome when he smiled.

But how could Jenson, who had given her a dirty look earlier, suddenly change his tune in the next instant and become so cute and adorable? Josephine felt a chill down her back.

Could it be that this child was really schizophrenic?

“Jenson, is the friend you came to the amusement park to meet not here?”

Josephine asked carefully, afraid she would touch on this little prince’s easily-triggered nerves.

Baby Robbie revealed a row of straight

white little teeth, grinning as he said, "Aunt Josephine, my friend is at the carousel. Do you want to go say hi?"

Josephine said very loyally, "It's rare that you made a friend, Jenson. I'll give you some face and go meet your friend!"

Baby Robbie then turned and ran like the wind, calling, "Aunt Josephine, you'd better hurry up then."

When Josephine walked close to the carousel, she noticed "Jenson" had disappeared. Josephine opened her mouth and yelled, "Jenson, where are you?"

Ages later, Jenson appeared suddenly before her like a ghost, looking at her with great bitterness and grudge. "You lost me." These three words popped out through gritted teeth.

Josephine's jaw nearly fell to the floor. The Jenson just now had smiled at her and talked so much. How could he return to this ghost-frightening appearance in the blink of an eye?

"Jenson, you can't really be

schizophrenic, right?" Josephine stepped up and attempted to pat her nephew's head, but Jenson very disgustingly dodged her claws, giving her a death glare as well.

Josephine gripped her aching head and wailed, "Heavens, just what sins have our Ares household committed? Why must my Jenson be treated this way?"

"You're crazy." Jenson turned and left.

Josephine lost her strength and collapsed onto the bench beside her. She pulled out her phone and called Jay, crying.

"Brother!"

On the other side of the phone, the corners of Jay's eyes twitched slightly when he heard Josephine's howling sobs.

Chapter 56

“What did Jenson do to you this time?”

“He didn’t do anything to me!” Josephine truly did not know how to tell her older brother. She was afraid this terrible news would make his head spin.

Jay’s thoughts remained in the past. “Then what did you do to him?”

Josephine said, “I didn’t do anything to him either!”

Jay’s handsome face clouded over. “Then what are you crying and howling for?”

Josephine’s sobbing turned into wailing. “Brother, something happened to Jenson.”

Jay said coolly, “Josephine, can you say everything in one go?”

Josephine wiped her tears. Her emotions of grief carried a hint of excitement as she said passionately, “Big Brother, today Jenson sometimes treated me coldly without a care like a freezer in

winter, then other times he would be as warm as the sun in June. When he was cold, he called me Josephine Ares and called me neurotic. When he was warm, he called me Aunt Josephine and even smiled at me. Big Brother, in just this short time, Jenson kept switching like this so many times. If he's just acting in front of me, he could win an Oscar."

Hearing Josephine's report, the palm holding Jay's phone started being beaded with cold sweat.

If this was the first time a situation like this happened, perhaps Jay would not have taken it seriously. However, two days ago, Jenson had behaved unusually in front of him too.

If Jenson had once again frequently showed two different personalities today, then he truly suspected Jenson had schizophrenia.

Jay stood up. When he next spoke, a chill slipped into his voice. "Where is Jenson now?"

Josephine cried out, "Oh, no. I don't know

where he ran off to either.”

“Where are you now?” Jay asked calmly.

“The amusement park.”

“Amusement park?” Iciness shone from Jay’s eyes.

Ever since Rose brought Jenson to the amusement park, the little guy had lingered over it?

Twenty minutes later, Jay appeared at the amusement park.

When Josephine saw Jay, she immediately started crying. “Big Brother, I’m sorry. I lost Jenson!”

“Go find him,” Jay said coldly.

Nancy, who had come with him, then pulled him to the left to look whereas Josephine went to search the right.

After Jenson and Baby Robbie had played around awhile, they decided to end this game and each return to their respective homes because they were worried they would worry Daddy and Mommy.

Baby Robbie could not bear to be parted

and said, "Jenson, when can I next see you?"

"Anytime you contact me," Jenson answered.

"I'll be heading this way then."

"Mhm. I'll go this way."

The two children parted ways.

When Baby Robbie left the amusement park, he coincidentally met Josephine. "Aunt Josephine!" Baby Robbie waved at her.

When Josephine saw Baby Robbie, she rolled up her sleeves like she was about to beat him up. "You little brat, I nearly thought you went missing. Do you know how scared I was? Get over here. If I don't pummel you today, I'm not Josephine Ares." ①

Chapter 57

Baby Robbie gave a sneaky smile. "If you want to spank me, then you'll have to see if you can catch me, won't you?"

After saying this, Baby Robbie dashed over. Josephine spread her arms wide, a disbelievingly menacing expression on her face. "I just don't believe I can't catch you."

Jenson usually did not like to exercise. Once winter came, he frequently caught respiratory diseases. This was why Josephine would so scorn his athletic ability and even gave him an unfriendly nickname: Sickly Chicky.

She did not know that the person she met today was not Jenson but Baby Robbie, who had been participating in Taekwondo training since he was little. His physical abilities and speed all surpassed those of the same age group, and he was unusually agile.

When Josephine extended her hand to

block Baby Robbie, Baby Robbie kicked her arm away in a spin kick, then somersaulted through the air to land behind Josephine, where he slipped away like a fish.

Seeing Baby Robbie so beautifully and nimbly execute these moves, she was so shocked her eyeballs could have fallen to the ground. "F*ck me, my Jenson is so cool?"

However, a different voice of reason sounded low in Josephine's head. "Jenson hasn't learned martial arts before. Normally, when he fights, he uses his mouth to bite. His body is weak too, so Grandpa and Grandma could not bear for the child to suffer in learning martial arts. There's no way this child could have so nimbly performed."

When Josephine turned around again, how could the shadow of Baby Robbie still be in the empty field of her vision?

"Jenson?" Josephine hastily chased after him.

After she went half a round, she did not

catch Baby Robbie, but she met up with Jay and Nancy. However, Jay's hand tightly clutched Jenson's.

When Josephine saw Jenson, she mistook him for Baby Robbie. She shrugged her pained arm and huffily walked in front of Jenson, interrogating him. "Jenson, I'm your biological aunt. How could you bear to kick me with so much force?"

Jenson rolled his eyes at her, his expression like he did not want to bother with her.

After Josephine finished speaking, she rolled her sleeve up and showed it to Jay. "Big Brother, see how ruthless this brat is? Treating his own aunt like an enemy who killed his father?"

Jay looked at the mess of bruises on Josephine's arm and furrowed his eyebrows. "You stumbled and knocked yourself around, which you're framing Jenson for, aren't you?"

Josephine wanted to cry but could not summon the tears.

"Jay Ares, I swear I'm sincere. This injury

really is caused by your little prince kicking me, though he indeed didn't scratch or bite me. It was a kick injury?"

Jay's face, like it was carved from ice, had a clear expression of disbelief.

Even Nancy stood at Jenson's side this time, very tactfully reminding Josephine, "Josephine, you said Jenson kicked you? How could this be? When Jenson kicked you, you would have raised your hand up. He can't kick so high, can he?"

Imitating Baby Robbie, Josephine made a sudden spin kick. Although this imitation was not exact, and she even staggered after finishing this move, it was still recognizable enough to let others see this was a spin kick of high difficulty in Taekwondo.

"He kicked me just like this?" Josephine finished her performance and stared very upset at Jay.

She had thought that after she put in the effort to perform it that she could get Jay's recognition. Who knew Jay would disbelieve her even more and say a little

impatiently, “Josephine Ares, stop fooling around. Jenson is just a five-year-old kid. If you want to play a prank on him, it has to be appropriate. Framing and blaming him, lying so much you could write an essay, will give Jenson a bad influence.” ①

Josephine looked utterly helpless, then shouted, “Brother, why don’t you believe me? I’m telling the truth—”

“Jenson has never learned Taekwondo.” Jay left, pulling Jenson with him.

Josephine lingered where she was. ①

Chapter 58

Yes, she, too, felt it was mysterious. These few years while she had been overseas, she often had video calls with her family, yet she had never heard Jenson was training in martial arts. Moreover, when she came back home for winter and summer breaks, she had never seen Jenson go for training either.

Then what was that dexterous ability he had shown earlier?

Josephine thought hard over this as she walked, but she could not think of a reason no matter how she wracked her brain.

When Jay brought Jenson out of the amusement park, he saw a bunch of people surrounding a red supercar at the entrance. Jay's face darkened instantly. "Josephine Ares!"

Hearing Jay's fierce shout, Josephine jogged over. When she saw her sports car was so carelessly left that it was covered

with many fines, she cried without tears.

“How should I reprimand you? Wait till you get on the headlines tomorrow.” Jay absolutely hated the high-profile, show-off appearance of his little sister as if she earnestly wished her face could be molded into gold.

Josephine actually felt very wronged. If she had not been afraid she had lost Jenson, she would not have parked her car illegally.

She blamed Jenson for this debt.

Jay brought Jenson back to the Horizon villa. Nancy went back to the company as she had matters to attend to whereas Josephine followed Jenson, her bad intentions lingering.

Jay questioned his sister, puzzled. “Josephine, aren’t you scared Jenson will bite you?”

Josephine stuck her chest out and brought out the determination of a warrior who would cut his own wrist. “Big Brother, I’m telling you, Jenson has a

secret. When I dig out his secret, then you have to believe what I said today. I really didn't speak a word of untruth. He did kick me today, and his moves were very swift, the movement as smooth as flowing water—he very much had the air of a martial arts master!”

“The more you say, the more outrageous it gets.” Jay helplessly shook his head.

After he entered the house, Jay went into the kitchen.

Jay wore a white t-shirt. With his elegant head of thick, black hair, paired with his pale skin and imperturbable, double-folded phoenix eyes, he exuded an air of class that he had been born with. It made others distance themselves, not daring to get closer, as if he was a godly prince who did not consume human food.

Josephine stared distractedly at Jay. Big Brother had borne the pride and glory of the Ares family ever since he was born, growing up with the protection of all who were devoted him, and it was he who excelled so much it was like he was not a

regular person. He lived days where he only had to reach his arms through his clothes and open his mouth to be fed ever since he was little.

Who could have thought then after he had Jenson, Big Brother would lay off all the nannies in the house because of Jenson's autism and take over all the housework, raising his child as both father and mother.

He truly was a peerlessly good man!

Josephine slid a deeply apprehensive glance at Jenson beside her, only to notice Jenson as using a similarly apprehensive glare to look at her.

"You can go now." Jenson very impolitely dismissed her.

Josephine stared at him. "Jenson, you backstabbing bastard. Tell your aunt honestly. Just who was the person you had a date with today? It's not your little girlfriend, is it?"

Jenson looked at her thin crimson lips opening and closing, willfully covering

his ears. He said disgustedly, "So long-winded."

Josephine pulled Jenson's hands away. He did not want to listen, but she wanted him to. "Also, the thing about you knowing martial arts, I'll definitely investigate till the truth comes out."

A flustered expression crossed Jenson's face. Josephine saw it all clearly and strengthened the conviction in her heart. "I just know you're hiding some secret you can't tell anyone from your daddy. I'll definitely dig them out."

Readers also enjoyed



Daddy, Mommy Has Fled Again

Romance

Love

lovestory

10.2K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 59

Jenson could not be bothered to acknowledge his aunt and squeezed into the kitchen to help his daddy.

Josephine found it dull and uninteresting, leaving hastily.

“Brother, I’m leaving. Remember to get a doctor to look at Jenson. Grand Asia’s Dr. Xander Zachary is not bad.” Josephine left after saying this.

Jay’s expression cooled slightly. The doctor his sister recommended was a top expert in psychiatry. His heart very much rebelled getting Jenson in contact with psychiatry studies.

He subconsciously felt Jenson was the same as he was, only quiet and antisocial when he was little. When he grew up and made a few friends who truly knew him, this type of personality would change for the better.

However, these few days, Jenson often

switched between talkative activeness and silent moodiness. This struck Jay's alarm. He was afraid his own carelessness would lead to him letting slip the best period of treatment for Jenson. ①

During dinner, Jay made the decision to have an open and honest conversation with Jenson.

"Jenson, I'll get Dr. Zachary to come over tomorrow to check you out, okay?"

Jenson's reaction was very intense. He raised his head and protested, "I'm not sick."

Jay reasoned with him patiently, "Jenson, not treating illnesses isn't right!"

Jenson widened his eyes that were as deep as the sea as he stared at his daddy. He bit his lip and emphasized each and every word, "I'm—not—sick."

"Lately, you've been acting very unusually. You chatted with Grandpa and Grandma, and you were even willing to play chess with your aunt. You would never do these kinds of things in the past.

“Jens, why?” Jay wanted to know the reason his son changed this way.

Jenson was slightly startled. The things Daddy talked about were probably what Baby Robbie did, were they not?

“I was in a good mood,” Jenson said coolly.

Jenson thought carefully and remained close-lipped.

Jay spoke yet again. “And today at the amusement park, you went from smilingly calling Josephine ‘Aunt Josephine’ to coldly calling her crazy. Why would this be?”

Jenson wrinkled his eyebrows. He and Baby Robbie had exchanged places in front of Josephine today originally to prank her, but he never thought Josephine would make a mountain out of a molehill and sneakily telling tales to Daddy. It was too hateful.

Seeing Jenson bury his head and not say anything for a long time, Jay’s heart grew inexplicably heavy. His large hand

warmly held Jenson's hand, and he said, "Jens, Daddy has decided. I'll ask Dr. Zachary to come over tomorrow."

Jenson dropped his head and sighed audibly.

He had been ruined by the scourge that was Josephine.

The next day.

Dr. Zachary arrived at the villa as agreed. Jay called him into the study, and the two of them talked privately. This was to avoid Jenson. They were afraid that if Jenson knew the content of their discussion, it would cause him to panic.

"Mr. Ares, according to the situation you've described, the possibility of Jenson having schizophrenia is very high. Of course, the final result would still need an instrument's monitoring to determine. I suggest you bring Jenson to Grand Asia for a check—"

Jay waved a hand at him. A somber expression appeared on his face that was as handsome as a Greek sculpture. "You'

re the authority in this aspect. Since you're so sure, I think Jenson must really have this disorder. Start a treatment regimen for him then." ①

Dr. Zachary nodded seriously. "Yes."

AMP20 WORK

Chapter 60

After Dr. Zachary left, Jenson ran into the study room. He pushed open the door to find Jay with his head in his hands, the appearance of one in severe pain. Jenson had the answer in his heart.

“He said I’m sick too?” Jenson said angrily.

Jay lifted his gaze to see his son’s face that was so shinningly handsome. A barely detectable hint of concealed worry appeared on his face.

He thought that it was perhaps Jenson was too perfect that the heavens would have to give him some challenge.

“Jenson, Dr. Zachary says your disorder is still in its early stages. As long as we actively cooperate, it will get better.” Jay did not want to tell Jenson about this cruel matter, but he needed Jenson to cooperate with the coming treatment, so he had to accept this reality.

“Treating my life like it’s grass to

trample on," Jay said angrily through pursed lips.

Kay looked at the angrily upset face of Jenson and hardened his heart. The matter at hand this time was very serious. He could not bend to Jenson's whims.

"Daddy has decided. Resistance is futile." After Jay announced this unusually overbearingly, he got up and left.

On the other hand, Jenson fell into melancholy.

To Jenson, this weekend went by quite depressingly. Hence, when Monday came, Jenson unprecedentedly looked forward to going to school.

This was clearly a very good phenomenon, but Jay did not know whether to worry or rejoice. The Jenson that liked to go to school and the one who did not only made him think of the two different personalities his schizophrenia caused. Otherwise, he could not find a reasonable third explanation.

After he sent Jenson to kindergarten, Jay

arrived at the office. Having had a soul-stirring weekend, he had nearly forgotten that he had hired a new assistant.

Hence, when he saw Rose in the office, he did not come to his senses for a while. He stared at her, face green.

“Mr. Ares, good morning!” Rose wore a professional, short-sleeved, white button-up shirt and red leather stilettos with high and thin heels. She had her hair high up on her head in a bun. She looked mature and steady as she sophisticatedly aimed a professional and refined smile at him.

Jay walked inside with his face blank. By the time he sat on his chair, Rose had already passed him his work schedule for the day.

Jay's gaze swept over his day's schedule arrangements. It integrated work and rest as well as took care of his family and company. It was highly efficient and reasonable.

“Not bad,” he praised with a wooden expression.

He did not know why but he thought of his previous son Jenson. Because he got schizophrenia after he met Rose, Jay found Rose—who had performed perfectly—an eyesore no matter how he looked at her, so he wanted to find something to nitpick to make things difficult for her no matter what.

“Make me a coffee. Thirty percent bitter and seventy percent sweet,” he ordered with ill intentions.

Rose observed the faint rage hidden beneath Jay’s eyes and went to perform this task especially carefully. Despite her being so meticulous that she had nearly used a physics formula to calculate the 3:7 ratio of coffee and sugar, when she placed the cupful of coffee filled with sincerity in front of Jay, he reacted viciously with after just a sip.

“Too bitter!” Jay drew his brows together and lifted his gaze to glare at the woman at a loss.

Rose picked up the coffee cup. “I’ll add some more sugar.”

Only when Jay tasted the coffee for the second time, he still wrinkled his brows and kept his face blank as he split hairs. “Too sweet.”

Rose looked at Jay, rage like a blazing fire beneath her eyes though the look on her face could still be considered humble. “Mr. Ares, I didn’t add sugar just now.”

Jay’s expression could not be described in just one sentence.

“You’re playing me?” His handsome face cracked, every fragment of it fury embodied.

Readers also enjoyed



Twins in Her Womb: Sir Preside...

baby

Romance

Marriage

115.1K readers **Recommend Reading**

Chapter 61

Rose protested softly, "You're the one nitpicking."

It was fortunate she knew his tastes. He liked his coffee on the bitter side, yet he abnormally asked for a coffee seventy percent sweet today. Rose sensed then that he wanted to cause trouble out of nothing.

It was lucky that she had been mindful and cleverly exposed his plot. This stopped his unprovoked troubling of her just in time.

Only, she had greatly underestimated Jay's penchant for seeking vengeance for the smallest grievances.

Jay turned on his computer and randomly brought up the webpage of a company under Grand Asia. Using his so-far peerless hacker skills, he added a few firewalls to the webpage, then looked at Rose and prepared to let her fall into his trap.

“Rose Loyle, Grand Asia’s Qiling’s network has been infiltrated by hackers. Turn on the computer over there at once and return Qilin to normal as soon as possible.”

Rose stared at Jay’s smiling-yet-unsmiling eyes and felt that there was something odd about this task, but one had to bow their heads beneath the eaves, so she could only obediently undertake it.

She turned the computer on. While she waited for the computer to boot up, Jay’s voice floated over like an evil spirit’s. “Rose, is one day’s time enough?”

Rose had always been the genius of the hacking empire. She had never met a worthy opponent ever since she was little. In the field she specialized in, she had once dominated the hacking empire for many years.

“Half a day is enough,” Rose said.

The corners of Jay’s lips lifted slightly. Qilin’s network issues were his handiwork. Rose wanting to unlock his

key in half a day was such wishful thinking.

Forget half a day—she might not be able to resolve this even in her remaining lifetime.

On this earth, if someone could be his equal, it could be nobody but Angeline Severe.

“Half a day? Can you put that into writing?” Jay asked domineeringly.

Rose knew her success or failure concerned the entire Qilin’s regular operations. If the company webpage could not be used, a delay of an hour would bring losses of millions or even tens of millions.

Rose’s confidence made her accept Jay’s challenge calmly. “If I can’t finish this assignment in half a day, how you want to kill or break me is as you wish.” Rose possessed the chivalry of a jianghu person.

Jay nodded, smiling coldly. “Alright.”

He thought he could see this woman’s

unconcealable look of shamefulness very soon. This was the result he was hoping to see.

Rose entered the primary page of the Qilin company's website and noticed many of the functions' links led to crashes. Moreover, the important database within was garbled. It seemed it did not require the skills she possessed, but it was clear it was a top-notch hacker's malicious damage as Rose could not revert it to the normal system operations very quickly.

Jay watched Rose fully throw herself into her work. Seeing the area between her brows knit slightly, his sexy lips quirked up in a wicked arc.

When office hours were over, Jay sinisterly said to Rose, "I think you should succeed very soon, shouldn't you? Remember to close the doors and windows properly before you get off work. I'll get Mimi to prepare a personal office for you tomorrow."

"Yes." Rose did not have the time to deal

with him.

Jay left gleefully.

This overconfident woman was so proud and arrogant, and she did not know to refuse him. He wanted her to have a taste of shame.

Tomorrow, she would still be unable to decipher the hacker code. How would she face him?

Grand Asia's employees clocked out one after another. Rose sent a voice message to her kids, telling them that she had to stay at the company for overtime a little while and urging them to be careful on the way home from school as well as get dinner themselves.

...

What went around, came around.

Chapter 62

On one hand, Jay was feeling secretly gleeful that he had disciplined Rose, but on the other hand, he received a phone call from Jenson's teacher that made him feel unsettled.

Over the phone, Jenson's teacher said, "In these two days, Jenson's behavior at school has been overly strange. The contrast between his emotions is enormous. Yesterday, he was still a bright and active little cutie, yet today, he's become a silent little lamb."

Jay quietly hung up the phone. The contrast in Jenson's emotions was so obvious that anyone who had previously interacted closely with him could clearly feel the incredible change. Could this be a reflection of the severity of Jenson's schizophrenia?

Jay's feeling of childish delight immediately ceased to exist.

In the night, all was quiet and still.

The city's neon lamps were bright and colorful, but they could not shine through to Jay's dark and gloomy heart. He drove around in his Rolls-Royce on his lonesome through the multicolored road, feeling for the first time that even he would experience loneliness and helplessness.

At that moment, he faintly longed for a soulmate.

He arrived at Grand Asia and obtained Jenson's medication based on the prescription given by the doctor before returning to the villa.

Jenson was sitting on the staircase waiting for him. As Jay entered the house holding the bag of medicine, he saw Jenson's small body curled on top of the stairs. Jay rushed over and brought Jenson into his warm embrace, asking him affectionately, "Why aren't you sleeping?"

Jenson looked startled as he gazed at his daddy's gloomy face. Ever since he got sick, his daddy had become haggard.

In his heart, Jenson felt incredibly guilty, because he had lied to Daddy. He really was not sick. The dual personality from his so-called schizophrenia was actually just because Baby Robbie had entered his life.

However, Jenson could not tell Daddy about the true situation. At least, not now. Baby Robbie said that only if Daddy agreed to make up with Mommy, then only could he appear in front of Daddy.

“Daddy, you and Mommy should get remarried!” Jenson said the sentence without thinking, causing Jay to feel dumbfounded.

Jay stared at Jenson, stunned. “Why would you suddenly bring that up?”

Jenson lowered his long lashes and said softly, “If Daddy and Mommy make up, then my sickness will naturally get better.”

Jay’s heart felt like cold air had been poured over it. His breathtaking eyes were covered in a layer of ice. “Jenson,

tell Daddy. Your recent unstable moods, are they caused by Rose?"

Jenson did not know how to answer. For a child like him who did not speak much, all questions that he could not answer were met with silence.

The rage beneath Jay's eyes kept growing. "Tell Daddy. Do you already know your mommy is Rose Loyle?"

Jenson nodded.

Towards this matter, Jay did not question it at all.

Back then, when Rose was captured by him in Grand Asia's office, she still managed to escape without any obstruction. If it had not been Jenson who helped her open the fingerprint lock, how could she have so easily escaped his Wuzhi Mountain?

Jay's slender fingers clenched tightly in a fist. Because he used too much force, every knuckle was squeezed pale and bloodless.

His resentment toward Rose at that

moment nearly burst through the charts.

Five years ago, she had slept with him and ran off.

Ten months later, she abandoned Jenson and hid overseas after faking her death.

He wished he could strangle her, and it was not the first time the idea sprung up that she was better off dead than alive.

However, in the end, for Jenson's sake, he managed to squash this hatred with great effort and willpower.

Readers also enjoyed



Forceful Marriage: Young Mast...

Romance Love lovestory

133.4K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 63

Jay suddenly felt that his kindness was a double-edged sword. Although his kindness protected Jenson's image of his beloved motherly figure, Rose misused his kindness to confuse Jenson in order to get him to her.

'Shameless!'

At half-past midnight, Rose finally deciphered the hacker's password and resumed the operation of Qilin's website.

After Rose shut down the computer, closed all the doors and windows, everything was sorted for her to leave. She picked up her bag on the computer desk and was about to leave.

Suddenly, the office door was kicked open from the outside. Right in the middle of the door frame, the lights in the corridor backlit a tall and big figure.

Immediately, the figure's slender hand moved toward the light's switches beside

the door and the dark office became brightly lit again.

"Sir Ares? Why are you here?" Rose looked at Jay, his entire body piercing cold that would scare anyone by the sight of him. Even though he was always a cold person, he was especially icy that day, so cold that it would make anyone shiver.

He strided toward rose, step by step with his long legs, and his eyes bloodshot. Rose's heart started racing and her body moved backward involuntarily.

"Sir Ares!"

Jay's fist suddenly swung toward her. Rose was so frightened that she shut her eyes tight as she could not bear to witness his violence toward her.

However, Jay's fist did not land on her head but on the wall next to her. The luxurious marble inlaid stone wall was unusually hard and Jay's hand was immediately bloody.

Rose was scared badly and her chest undulated sharply. She started having

trouble breathing. The copper colored eyes looked at Jay incredulously.

After some time, Rose's wiry angry voice sliced through the air, "If you are angry at me, just hit me. What's the point of abusing yourself?"

"Shut up." Jay growled at her. He stretched out his hand to hold her chin brutally and said viciously, "Rose, do you know how much I hate you?"

Rose's eyes started to water. She loved him but he hated her. The amount of hate he had for her was the same amount of how much as she loved him. They were destined to be two intersecting straight lines, with only one intersection in their entire life, and then departing from each other further and further.

"Why?" Rose asked with a choked voice.

She was also a dignified and decent person. If it was not for her love for him, she would never do all those lowly things.

She gave birth for him!

"Rose. Since your appearance, you have

triggered schizophrenia in Jenson. Are you happy with what you've done?" Jay roughly held Rose's shoulders and read her crimes against him in an aloof way as if she was his prisoner.

"You've confused him and taken advantage of his little heart. You took advantage of his desire for a mother to get closer to me. Do you really think that you can slowly creep your way up to be my wife again?"

"I didn't." Rose felt wronged and felt despair over Jenson's illness.

"Lies!" Jay roared like an awakened lion. "You liar, don't you think you've fooled me enough last time? Do you really think that I'll believe anything you say?"

When he mentioned their previous time together, Rose was speechless.

She lied to him in the name of love.

"Rose, I want you out of Jenson's world completely." Jay announced with the inviolability of a king, "I'll give you 100 million. Within forty-eight hours, I want

you to get out of this country and never come back."

Rose protested feebly, "Sir Ares, I can't leave..."

"That's not my problem." Jay's eyes were burning with flames. "Rose, don't forget that your mother's life is still in my hands." His voice was like a lifeless ghoul crawling out of an ancient tomb, squeezing Rose tightly. She felt like she was suffocated and on the brink of death.

Rose looked at the furious man in front of her and tried to comfort him, "Sir Ares, Jens is just a child. It's normal for kids to behave emotionally. Let me meet Jenson, I'm sure the doctor misdiagnosed him..."

"Rose, don't play tricks on me anymore. Let me say it again, if you don't leave this country within forty-eight hours, you'll be waiting to collect your mother's body!

" Jay announced and walked away. ❶

Chapter 64

Rose sank weakly to the ground.

She dragged her tired body unbearably with a sore heart and returned to Splendid Town.

The two children were soundly asleep and Rose hugged her knees on the sofa. She buried his head in her knees and sobbed sadly.

She was worried about Jenson!

She also sympathized with Jay.

It felt like she could not do anything for them, and that made her even more sad and desperate.

Baby Robbie was awakened by the intermittent sobbing in the living room. He put on his slippers and smacked their way into the living room. His little hands hugged Mommy's head gently, "Mommy, what's wrong with you?"

Rose looked up and Baby Robbie saw

Mommy's red, teary, and swollen eyes. Immediately, he felt heartbroken. "Mommy, is your boss bullying you?"

An angry look flashed in Baby Robbie's eyes. He knew that letting Mommy work in Daddy's company would end up with Daddy bullying Mommy. He immediately thought that he and Jenson should not have tried to make Daddy and Mommy back together.

Rose hugged Baby Robbie. She said with extreme sadness, "Baby Robbie, Mommy just lost her job. My boss fired me."

Baby Robbie angrily said, "It doesn't matter, Mommy. If you're not welcomed there, you'll be welcome somewhere else! here is where you don't have to keep your master. We'll look for another job."

Rose looked at Baby Robbie apologetically, "Baby Robbie, Mom decided to move all of us back to Europe."

Baby Robbie reacted sharply, "Huh? When are we leaving?"

"In two days!"

Baby Robbie returned to his room and could not wait to tell Jenson about bad news. "Jenson, I'm going back to Europe the day after tomorrow. What should I do?"

Jenson was sleeping soundly and did not read Baby Robbie's text messages.

Baby Robbie did not wait for Jenson's reply and went to bed gloomily.

The next day.

Horizon Colors.

When Jay pushed open Jenson's door, he found his little blanket folded away neatly and Jenson was nowhere to be seen.

"Jenson!" Jay yelled twice but no one answered him.

He searched the garden and the attic, but Jenson was nowhere to be seen.

Jay looked through the entire villa and finally found Jenson's smartwatch on his gaming table.

When he looked through his text

messages on the smartwatch, he found a suspicious message that read, "Jenson, we're going back to Europe soon. What should I do?"

All the colors suddenly went out in Jay's handsome face.

He could not think of who would send that message to Jenson except Rose.

He forced her to leave yesterday and she sent the text message to Jenson in the middle of last night. He knew exactly what she intended to do.

'How evil!'

At that moment, a call suddenly came from Josephine. It was as if someone had thrown firecrackers at him. She roared fiercely, "Jay, do you know that your son has secretly run away from home?"

Chapter 65

Jay's heart that was in his mouth finally fell back down. "You know where Jenson is?"

Josephine was tooting her own horn and boasted, "I always knew your little boy had an ulterior motive. That's why when I came to monitor him early in the morning, this little guy slipped out of the house at 6 o'clock as expected. He had his backpack on and took Bus 989 that headed to City North."

Jay felt terrified. In his eyes, Jenson was his little baby in a pen who would never go out without an adult. How did he go so far by himself?

"Jay, that's all I have to say. I'm driving right now, tailing the bus. I'll call you as soon as I find out anything about him." Josephine finished speaking and hung up.

Before Jay had the time to ask her where Jenson was, he threw the phone aside sullenly. The only thing he could do then

was to passively wait for Josephine's call.

When Bus 989 that Jenson was on arrived near Splendid Town, Jenson got off the bus.

Josephine was smarter that time around and drove a low-key BMW off-road vehicle. She parked in a nearby parking shed and hurried off to chase Jenson.

Jenson kept his head down and walked forward, not noticing the wolf with a big tail behind him.

Josephine wondered to herself, 'Where is this guy going?'

Jay was worried about Jenson and kept calling Josephine to question her while Josephine patiently reported to him about Jenson every time.

"The little bun is now in a residential building... The housing estate is called Splendid Town. The greenery around the estate looks good but the buildings are pretty high. One, two, three... eighteen stories. But the architecture of the building's not bad..."

On the phone, Jay's exquisite and handsome face turned as dark as coal. "Josephine, I just want to know about Jenson. I have no interest in the greenery or architecture of the housing estate."

Josephine pouted and said, "Jay, don't you want to know the identity, status, and financial situation of the person Jenson wants to meet?"

"No, I don't." Jay gritted his teeth angrily. "He wants to see his mommy, Rose."

Josephine was dumbfounded. She said defeatedly, "So you knew all about it?"

"Go and see what exactly Rose is planning up her sleeves. I can't believe she's playing around with Jenson," Jay said angrily.

Josephine nodded, "Okay."

Jenson walked straight toward Block 9, reached out his hand, and pressed the keypad naturally.

Josephine was dumbfounded. "This guy

doesn't seem to be here for the first time."

The door buzzed and opened. After Jenson entered, the building's door closed automatically.

When Josephine ran toward the door, she was too late.

"Oh no! What should I do, what should I do? I lost him!" Josephine was anxious.

The next moment on the ninth floor.

Ding dong...

When the doorbell rang, Rose was inside the house, making breakfast for the kids. That day's breakfast was really hearty. In addition to Baby Robbie and Zetty's pastry, she also made an extra serving of pastry for a kid. She probably had the unrealistic dream that hoped Jenson could one day have breakfast with them.

When she heard the doorbell, Rose went to the door, apron and all. She looked through the door's peephole and saw a tiny figure outside the door. Rose immediately opened the security door.

Jenson stood at the door with tears on his

handsome and cool face. Rose was surprised. She could not believe it. Was that her Jenson?

AMP20 WOV



Sir Ares, Goodnight!

Yan An

Language: English

Even after two lifetimes, Rose still could not melt the ice-cold heart of Jay Ares. Heartbroken, she decides to live under the guise of an idiot, tricking him and running away with their two children. This infuriates Sir Ares to no end, and everyone around them is certain that this will prove to be Rose's ultimate demise. However, upon the next day, the great Sir Ares is seen getting down on one knee in the middle of the street, coaxing the little brat, "Please be good and come home with me!" "I will, but only if you agree to my terms!" "Speak your mind!" "You are not allowed to bully me, lie to me, and especially not show your displeased face at me. You must always regard me as the most beautiful person, and you must smile whenever I cross your mind..." "Fine!" Onlookers are floored at sight of this! Is this the myth of how there is a



Read

Chapter 66

She suddenly ran inside the house because she was not sure if Baby Robbie was at home.

That was because sometimes Baby Robbie went outside to play by himself. She thought that it was because she missed Jenson too much that she mistakenly identified Baby Robbie as Jenson.

When Jenson saw Mommy running off after seeing him, the tears from the corners of his eyes flowed down.

However, Rose ran out again the very next moment and hugged Jenson tightly into her arms.

"Jens, it's really you." She was very happy and very excited. She picked Jenson up with one hand and locked the door with the other as she shouted at the two sleepyheads in their room, "Baby Robbie, Zetty. Come out. Come and see who visited you."

Baby Robbie and Zetty ran out quickly in

their pajamas. When Zetty saw Jenson, her eyes widened. "He looks exactly like Baby Robbie!"

Baby Robbie looked at Jenson and smiled.

Rose was obviously more excited than the children. She said incoherently, "Wait, let Mommy calm down! I want to think about how to introduce him to you guys!"

Baby Robbie smiled, "Mommy, he's called Jenson. But we don't know if he's the older brother or younger brother."

Rose was shocked. "How did you know?"

Baby Robbie walked up to Jenson and took Jenson's hand affectionately, "Mommy, Jenson and I have already met."

Rose was shocked by the news and for a moment, her brain was jammed.

Jenson approached Rose suddenly, begging softly, "Mommy, don't go."

Rose burst into tears instantly. She hugged Jenson tightly and tears flowed down from her cheeks to Jenson's face. She did not know whether she was

overwhelmed or surprised, but she was sure Jenson had touched her greatly.

"I'm sorry, Jens." Those words had been hidden in Rose's heart for a long time. She fantasized about it all the time that one day if there was a chance, those were the three words she wanted to tell Jenson.

"Mommy shouldn't have left you behind." Rose cried and confessed. "Mommy has abandoned you once and I'll never do it again."

Jenson's eyes were red and he reached out to wipe Mommy's tears, "Don't cry. I forgive you."

Zetty looked at Baby Robbie with a childish gaze for a while and then back at Jenson. Finally, she cheered, "This is wonderful! I have two brothers. This is so cool."

Rose finally recovered from the surprise of Jenson's arrival. She pulled Jenson to the table and served the pastry to him.

Zetty exclaimed in a soft voice, "Ah, it turns out that Mommy always made an

extra portion every time she makes a good meal for Big Brother Jenson!"

Baby Robbie corrected Zetty, "Mommy hasn't said whether Jenson is the elder or younger brother. Maybe he's the youngest."

The three children looked at Rose with expectation. Rose smiled and revealed the truth, "Jenson is your eldest brother."

Baby Robbie whimpered. He was a little disappointed with the answer.

Rose told the three cuties another thing, "When Mommy decided to leave a child with Daddy, it was Jens who got picked."

Rose looked at Jenson guiltily, "Jens, Mommy didn't leave you on purpose."

Jenson learned that Mommy didn't deliberately abandon him mercilessly. It was his fate to stay by Daddy's side, which made Jenson extremely happy.

It turns out that he was not a child abandoned by Mommy.

Chapter 67

After Jay Ares knew that Josephine failed to tail Jenson, he reluctantly made a phone call to Rose Loyle, being worried about the child's safety.

Rose was shocked when she saw the name on the call notification. She accidentally loosened her grip and the phone fell on the floor.

The phone landed on the floor with a dull thud. The back cover detached from the phone and the power was immediately cut off. The ringing stopped abruptly.

Jay Ares was waiting for the call to be picked up when a robotic voice notified him that the other party's phone was switched off. His handsome face darkened.

'How dare she switch off her phone?'

Jay decided to personally go to Splendid Town to ask her directly. Just when his Rolls Royce rolled out of the garage, he

received a call from Rose.

Jay was a little surprised when he saw the call. Then, he remembered that she had to obey him because her mother's life depended on him. Otherwise, she would not be so kind as to return the call.

"Sir Ares, there was a little accident just now. I didn't mean to hang up on you," Rose Loyle carefully explained the reason why the call was suddenly cut off.

A hint of a grin appeared on Jay Ares's face, though he said coldly, "I thought you're feeling guilty because you did something wrong!"

Rose broke out in cold sweat. 'That was an accurate guess!'

"Is Jenson with you?"

"Yes," Rose replied timidly.

"Why did Jenson appear in your house?" Jay asked sternly.

"I don't know..." That was the truth.

"Stop hurting Jenson, Rose," Jay said angrily.

Rose Loyle had a gentle temperament, as long as Jay Ares did not test her patience. Unfortunately for her, Jay's attitude had always put her on the defensive.

"How can you say that I'm hurting the child, Sir Ares? Jenson is my son, and I have nothing but endless love for him. Why would I hurt him? Shouldn't you bear the responsibility that Jenson ran away from your house this morning?" Rose retorted, upset that she was being unfairly accused.

"Please don't involve the children in the games of the adults, Rose Loyle."

Jay Ares was angry that Rose had called Jenson in the middle of the night and caused him to run away from home. Her actions had made the child emotionally unstable, but she did not admit to her fault.

A selfish woman like her should not be a mother.

He was especially furious when he thought about that, and he wanted to use

the strongest words on her to show her how angry he was. "How could you send that sort of message to Jenson in the middle of the night?"

Rose was immediately confused. "I've never sent Jens any message, Sir Ares."

Her denial made Jay Ares angrier than ever. "I think that I've been too kind to you! I should have to cut all ties with a pathological liar like you. Rose Loyle, are you saying that you did not tell Jenson that you are leaving him forever?"

Rose Loyle was at a loss for a reply.

Jay Ares's accusation and anger had choked her like a fetter.

"I swear that I've never sent Jenson that message. Why won't you believe me?" Rose retorted weakly. She felt that she was being wronged.

"How can I believe you, Rose? Who else in this world knows that you're leaving tomorrow, other than me and you?" Jay Ares interrogated.

Rose Loyle had a sudden realization.

Other than Jay and her, there was a third person who knew: Robert Loyle.

AMP20 WORK

Chapter 68

"You're not saying anything? Have you run out of excuses?" Jay Ares said coldly.

Rose Loyle's defiant tone softened by a lot. "I think I need some time to figure out what's been going on recently."

Jay immediately ended the call.

Rose Loyle roared at Baby Robbie in the play area. "Come over here this instant, Robert Loyle."

Baby Robbie dashed over as fast as he could and stood in attention like a soldier in front of Rose. "Robert Loyle reporting in. What's the order, Commander?"

Rose Loyle asked with her arms akimbo. "Tell me honestly, what have been doing with Jenson Ares?"

"I was wrong, Mommy." Baby Robbie lowered his head and apologized when he saw that his mother was angry.

"Stop beating around this bush. This is

serious. Tell me everything."

Baby Robbie did not dare to hide the truth when his mother said that things were serious. "Don't be angry at me, Mommy, I'll tell you everything. A few days ago, I switched identities with Jenson. I went to his school and taught a lesson to his bullies. I've also gone to his house, met his daddy, and lived with him for two days. His daddy is a nice person. He knows how to cook and he makes a lot of money, and he's super handsome too..."

Baby Robbie noticed the gloom in his mother's eyes and quickly shifted the topic. "But to me, you're still the best, Mommy..."

Rose Loyle did not know how to react. "Don't you know that you're in so much trouble, you brat? You've stepped into Jenson's world, and now his daddy thinks that he has split personalities. He's looking for a doctor to treat him!"

Jenson Ares appeared at the doorway. "I don't want to see a doctor," he said glumly. ❶

Baby Robbie mustered as much courage as he could and slapped his chest. "

Mommy, I've caused all this trouble, and I don't want Jenson to get into trouble because of me. At worst, I'll go back to Horizon Colors and eat all his medicine."

Rose Loyle was moved when she saw how eager Baby Robbie was.

She knew her son Robert too well. He had been a headstrong and independent boy since young. He was optimistic in the face of adversity and knew how to maneuver out of challenging situations. He was very fond of adventures.

Meanwhile, Jenson Ares was sensitive, delicate, and introverted. He was not very good at communicating.

If she sent Jenson back to Horizon Colors, Jay Ares would, in his overbearing personality, force Jenson to undergo psychiatric treatment. Jenson would either have to obediently undergo the treatment or lose control of his emotions and break down. Either outcome was extremely damaging to Jenson. Robbie

was different. He was resourceful and smart and had multiple ways of evading trouble.

Rose Loyle suddenly held Jenson's cheeks. "Jenson, are you willing to stay with Mommy?" She said, a little emotional.

Jenson Ares nodded.

Rose then turned to speak to Robbie. "Baby Robbie, are you willing..." She felt a lump in her throat. She did not want to send her Baby Robbie away to Jay's side.

Baby Robbie saw that Mommy's eyes were red and knew that she did not want to let him go. He gently patted Mommy's head and said, "Don't worry, Mommy. I will sneakily call you on the phone, and I will sneak out to visit you."

Rose Loyle hugged Robert close to her and kissed his cheek.

"Thank you, Robbie!" Jenson walked over coolly and thanked Robert.

"We're brothers, right? There's no need for those two words between us!" Baby

Robbie said gallantly.

Rose Loyle looked at the two brothers and smiled like a blooming flower.

Readers also enjoyed



I Love You, Emlyn Young

President

Love

Romance

35.7K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 69

When Jay Ares arrived at Block 9 of Splendid Town, Josephine Ares appeared from behind an ornamental rock. "I've waited for so long here, but that Jenson hasn't appeared yet," she said dejectedly.

Jay sullenly looked at the closed front door of the apartment complex and turned around to speak to Grayson who had come along with him. "Go to the management office and find out Rose Loyle's unit number."

Just when Grayson was about to leave, the apartment door suddenly opened. Rose Loyle appeared with 'Jenson Ares' in her arms. Her eyes were red, evidently from crying.

"Sister-in-law?" Josephine smiled when she saw Rose.

She received Jay's death glare. "Stop barking. She has no relation to the Ares family."

Josephine was cowed by her brother's

intimidating glare. "What do you mean? She's Jenson's mommy," she grumbled.

Jay was about to eat up Josephine with his eyes. Josephine gently slapped her cheek and admitted defeat. "Alright, alright. I'll just keep my mouth shut. Happy now?"

Rose Loyle carried 'Jenson Ares' over and looked at him longingly. Jay Ares did not say anything and grabbed the child over into his arms.

"Let's go, Jenson."

He did not say another word and started walking away.

Rose remained rooted on the spot as she longingly looked at Baby Robbie leaving. Baby Robbie waved at her and said, "Don't worry, Mommy, I'll be fine."

Jay gritted his teeth and said sullenly, "Who told you that she is your mother? She isn't your mommy."

"But she is!" Baby Robbie said indignantly. "I might look a lot like you, but that's because your genes are bullies. Mommy's genes are too gentle and kind

and they're hiding."

Jay Ares's anger instantly dissipated. A hint of a smile appeared in his ice-cold gaze.

Josephine Ares could not hold back and burst out laughing. "You are entirely right, Jenson. Your daddy's genes are dominant and your mommy's genes are recessive. That's why you look more like Daddy."

Meanwhile, Grayson was trying his best to hold back the laughter in.

Baby Robbie looked at Jay mischievously. "You can laugh if you want, Daddy. Why are you holding back your emotions? You're not a ninja turtle."

Grayson could not hold back his laughter anymore.

Jay Ares looked at the 'Jenson' who was suddenly very naughty. He could not see any hint of sadness or depression on the child's face. His eyes shone with a youthful recklessness.

He tried to cheer up. "Are you feeling

alright today?"

Baby Robbie hugged his neck, brought his lips to Daddy's face, and delivered a wet smack. Jay Ares's cheek was instantly covered in drool. "Don't be angry, Daddy. I'll let you know the next time I run away from home."

"Oh? There's a next time?"

"At first I was afraid, but I found out that running away from home can be very fun."

Josephine Ares was losing her mind laughing at her nephew's words.

"Your split personality is shocking, Jenson. One side of you is utterly cool and collected, and this other side of you is so charming and cute. Your Aunt Josephine likes both sides of you. What should I do?"

She praised her nephew as they sat in the car.

Jay's face instantly darkened when Josephine mentioned his son's split personality. "Josephine Ares. No one will think that you're mute if you don't speak.

"

He felt that Jenson had always been too sensitive, and Josephine's outgoing attitude would have easily hurt his son's delicate feelings. The psychiatrist had told him that children with mental issues were more easily hurt than other children.

'Jenson Ares' did not hold back and looked straight at his aunt's eyes. "You're mistaken, Aunt Josephine. I don't have a split personality." Then, he used a tone of voice only heard in horror movies, "Someone transmigrated into my body."

Chapter 70

Josephine could not hold her smile any longer because she realized that Jenson's schizophrenia seemed to have worsened.

"Oh no. Brother, our family's precious baby has reached a severe stage of schizophrenia."

Jay looked at Baby Robbie who was smiling so brightly, and his mood darkened.

The first thing that Jay did after bringing Baby Robbie back was to dig out the bag of white pills to try to coax Baby Robbie to take the medication. "Be a good boy and eat this."

Baby Robbie sighed like an old man. "Sigh. When the heavens bestow an important task, one has to go through all hardships, pain, and hunger to reach a state of emptiness..."

Jay's heart bled as he looked at his smart and cute son.

Baby Robbie reached for the pill and looked pitifully at his daddy. "Daddy, can I not eat this?"

Josephine added fuel to the fire by saying, "Jenson, you can't. Your illness has reached a critical stage. You'll be doomed if you don't take your medication."

Baby Robbie put the pill into his mouth and hid it under his tongue. "I want water."

Jay Immediately got up to fetch a cup of water for him.

Baby Robbie begged Josephine, "Aunt Josephine, this pill is so bitter. Can you get me a piece of chocolate?"

Josephine was more than happy to oblige. "As long as you take your medication obediently, I won't just get you chocolates. I'll get you anything even if you want the stars in the sky."

After Josephine left, Baby Robbie spat out the pill and used a tissue to wrap the pill before throwing it into the dustbin nearby.

When Jay came back with a cup of warm water, Baby Robbie immediately took the cup and gulped down the whole thing. “How bitter.”

Jay was surprised that ‘Jenson’ would be so cooperative. He ruffled his son’s head rewardingly. “You’re such a good boy today. What do you want to eat tonight? I’ll cook something good for you.”

“I want to have pizza at Kentucky.” Baby Robbie cheered.

Jay was dumbfounded.

Baby Robbie saw his daddy hesitate and thought that his dad felt that it was expensive. “McDonald’s will do as well!”

Josephine, who was descending the stairs, nearly rolled down the steps when she heard what Baby Robbie said.

“Brother, I don’t think our Jenson has schizophrenia. He looks more like he has transmigrated?”

“What do you mean?” Jay had never read web novels and was unfamiliar with

transmigration, soul-replacements, and all these kinds of terms.

“It means that his soul has been switched!” Josephine said it bluntly but was trying to sound scientific at the same time.

Jay shot a speechless look at his sister.

Josephine revealed her gossipy nature and analyzed the situation for Jay. “

Brother, hear me out. If Jay has schizophrenia or perhaps split personality disorder, regardless if he was outgoing or reserved, the things he says or does should all be based on his experience.

“But look at Jenson. He knows Taekwondo and knows about consumer-friendly fast food chains like Kentucky and McDonald’s. These are things that he never knew in the past. Don’t you think that it seems like his soul has been replaced?”

Chapter 71

Baby Robbie was extremely speechless and teased Josephine. "Aunt Josephine, you have such a rich imagination. It's such a waste that you're not writing a book."

Josephine instinctively wanted to pull Baby Robbie's ear. Each time she had a squabble with Jenson, she would pull his ear out of habit. Jenson would avoid her hands and give her a death glare in protest. However, the one sitting here was Baby Robbie who had learned Taekwondo. His first reaction toward violence was not to avoid but to apply what he had learned.

He blocked Josephine's approaching hand by hitting back and grabbing her hand. He hyperextended her joints which caused Josephine to yelp in pain.

"Ah... This is too painful! Jenson, let go!"

Baby Robbie released Josephine. She flung her hands in pain and looked at Jay

with deep suspense. "Brother, you're seeing this for yourself, right? You didn't believe it when I told you that your little ancestor knows Taekwondo. Now do you believe me?"

Jay looked at Baby Robbie with disbelief. The agility that 'Jenson' displayed was unlike a regular person's. His movements were so swift and accurate that their own bodyguards might find it difficult to match up to Baby Robbie in terms of speed.

Baby Robbie guiltily stood up from the couch and wanted to run upstairs.

"Jens, when did you learn Taekwondo?" Jay's voice resounded.

Baby Robbie paused his steps, turned around, and smiled sheepishly at Jay. "Daddy, I don't know Taekwondo! I just dislike Aunt Josephine pulling at my ear so much that I accidentally used too much strength. It was a flight or fight response, really..."

Jay found the explanation reasonable, so he did not interrogate further. However,

there was a faint glow in Jay's eyes as he looked meaningfully at Baby Robbie. Suddenly he said, "Go get ready. I'm bringing you to Kentucky." ①

Baby Robbie cheered happily.

On the contrary, Josephine looked like she had been struck by lightning and appeared dumbfounded. "Brother, aren't you worried that others will think that Grand Asia is heading toward bankruptcy?"

Jay's handsome looks revealed an extraordinarily confident smile. "Do you think that all my business partners are as brainless as you?"

Josephine said, "Aren't you afraid of going up on the hot search list?"

"Which unicellular organism is stupid enough to put a hacker genius onto the hot search list?" Jay replied coldly.

Josephine was rendered speechless.

Jay might be her big brother, but there were times when she hated his arrogant, high-and-mighty look.

Not long after, Baby Robbie carried his little school bag down. His hand was holding a cartoon character bottle as he skipped down the stairs.

“Daddy, I’m ready. Let’s go,” Robbie’s soft and cute voice melodiously rang.

Jay stood up and took Baby Robbie’s hand before heading out.

Josephine tagged along, but Jay asked her, “Are you sure you want to go to Kentucky with us?”

Josephine bit her lip before displaying a warrior’s determination. “Yes. I’ll go wherever Jenson goes. I’m not Josephine Ares if I can’t dig out Jenson’s secret.”

Baby Robbie stuck his tongue out. “Aunt Josephine, I don’t think you suit the name Josephine Ares. You should be named Lanxiang.”

“Lanxiang? What is Lanxiang?”

Josephine found the name rather familiar but could not recall it at that moment until Baby Robbie boasted.

“Where can you find someone with great

digging skills? In Shandong Lanxiang's vocational school!" ①

Jay tried to hold back his laughter.

Josephine was so angry that she stomped her feet. "You little brat. You're mocking me by equating me to an excavator?"

Chapter 72

Baby Robbie said, "Am I wrong? You love to gossip and you like to dig out other people's secrets so much so that you would dig three feet under just to find out someone's secrets. I don't know what else you'll be if you're not an excavator?"

Josephine was so angry that she waved her fist and wanted to punch Baby Robbie. Baby Robbie ran around the house, jumping around. Josephine chased after him for a long time before she started huffing and puffing due to how out of breath she was. No matter how she ran, she still could not even graze her fingers past Baby Robbie's clothes.

Jay watched the happily fighting aunt and nephew while standing on the sidelines. Although he was caught by surprise by the changes in 'Jenson' who was now suddenly sunny and active, it did not seem too bad if this were to become his permanent personality.

Because their driver was not around,

Josephine was tasked to drive them to Kentucky while Jay and Baby Robbie sat at the back. Josephine purposely adjusted the rearview mirror so that she could keep an eye on 'Jenson'.

Baby Robbie sat on Jay's lap. His soft hands touched his daddy's nose for a bit. Then, he touched his daddy's hair. In short, he did not stop touching his daddy.

"Does this child have a hyperactive disorder?" Josephine could not help from asking.

Jay's gaze darkened. In the past, Jenson would always sit like a mannequin while riding in the car. Today, 'Jenson' was touching and kicking about as if he could not sit still for a moment.

There was a hint of worry within Jay's gaze. To prevent his son from noticing the changes in his emotions, Jay turned to look out the window.

Outside the window, cars zoomed along the road. The streets were well lit, so the city looked bustling. A myriad of colors shone into his eyes but all he could see

was black, white, and grey.

He was pondering the fact that Rose was leaving tomorrow. Jenson's condition would slowly stabilize once she left Jenson forever. Later on, he would slowly improve and might even recover.

Whether the heavens were going to give him a reserved Jenson or an active Jenson, as long as he was healthy, that was all that mattered.

Baby Robbie was enjoying his pizza from Kentucky. Jay and Josephine were as insipid as chewing wax when they saw how Baby Robbie eating the pizza. He looked like he regularly ate pizza even though that was not the case.

Baby Robbie carefully packed the remaining slices of pizza and kept the container in his bag. Jay watched 'Jenson' who was deep in concentration and did not know how he should express his anguish.

Josephine took Baby Robbie's pizza and threw it into the dustbin. "Little ancestor, why are you treasuring the leftover

pizza? This is a bad habit.”

Baby Robbie was angry. “This is called wastage. Wasting is shameful!”

Jay was noticing Jenson’s changes little by little like a stream that trickled slowly before becoming into an ocean. That made his heart suddenly feel pressured.

Jenson was more familiar with Kentucky than Josephine. If Jay was logical enough, he would have started to suspect that Jenson’s soul had been transmigrated.

On the way home, Baby Robbie fell asleep in Jay’s arms.

Jay suddenly called his sister’s name, “Josephine!”

“Huh?” Josephine was concentrating on driving and turned around in surprise after Jay called her.

“Do something for me.”

Josephine looked at her brother solemnly as she understood that it must be a serious situation. “Brother, just tell me! As long as it’s within my capabilities, I

will do it for you even if it means toiling with my sweat and blood.”

“I want to know why each time Jenson meets Rose he becomes a different person,” Jay said after a pause.

Realization struck Josephine. “You want me to investigate Rose?”

“She is leaving this city tomorrow. You have to hurry.”

“No problem.”

Readers also enjoyed



The Young Wife is Pregnant: Pa...

Marriage

Sweet

President

103.4K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 73

Josephine was a talented paparazzi. She may be a lady of aristocratic background, but because of her big brother's request, she camped outside Splendid Town that night.

That same night, Rose was having insomnia.

Jay had given her a time limit to leave, but she could not convince herself to leave her child for the second time.

This time, she was going to be courageous and stay.

However, she decided to move to avoid any trouble from Jay.

When the day barely began, Rose dragged two large suitcases downstairs as Jenson and Zetty were sitting on top of the suitcases while looking sleepy.

Rose had just arrived at the gate when Josephine got out of her car. "Sister-in-law."

Perhaps the sky was still slightly dim, so Josephine assumed that the two sleepy heads on the suitcases were dolls. Her gaze was only fixed on Rose.

Rose was shocked to see Josephine as well. She remembered this lady. Rose had assumed that this attractive lady was Jay's new girlfriend. She just found out yesterday that she was Jay's younger sister.

They would have met once during the wedding five years ago, but Rose's short term memory made her forget that a person named Josephine even existed.

"Why are you here?" Rose looked suspiciously at the accessory around her neck that a paparazzi usually carried—a camera.

Josephine played with her slightly disheveled hair and smiled slyly. "Make a guess."

Rose squeezed out a knowing smile.

A few years ago when she was still living in the Ares household, she had heard

interesting stories about this aristocratic lady. Josephine once had a crush on an army personnel when she was younger, thus decided to use her excellent academic results to apply to the criminal investigations faculty at a military school. Unfortunately, that relationship did not work out, and she gave up on her studies.

Rose guessed that Jay was using Josephine's expertise to monitor her movements.

'What shall I do? With Josephine here, Jay will find out that I haven't left the country!'

Rose looked at Josephine and pondered. She and Josephine were in the same category. They were both upper-class ladies who had never suffered in life, thus their minds were filled with poetry and love. They became so miserable for the sake of love but were only left feeling exhausted and got disregarded.

Since they had similar experiences, perhaps they would speak the same language as well.

"I'm in the middle of moving to a new

house, Miss Ares. If you want to, you can come visit our new house.” Rose boldly invited.

Josephine was dumbfounded. “My big brother asked you to leave the country today. The consequences will be unbearable if you disobey him.”

Rose smiled bitterly. “I’ve disobeyed his commands multiple times already, but look, aren’t I still alive and breathing in front of you here today?”

Josephine was well aware of Jay’s revengeful nature which had earned him countless business rivals. His rivals would either end up going insane or become beggars.

Her brother hated Rose so much and Rose had disobeyed him on so many occasions, but she was indeed still living a good life and standing in front of her now.

Josephine could only manage a sigh.

However, Josephine liked Rose’s attitude of always finding a silver lining during challenging times. Josephine wished that she had met this sister-in-law of hers

earlier.

“Sister-in-law, your wish is my command. Hop in my car. I’ll drive.”

Rose smiled and nodded.

Josephine realized that she needed to help Rose with her luggage and reached over. Jenson suddenly pushed her hands away with clear disgust evident on his face.

Chapter 74

Josephine screamed out of shock. “This is an actual person?”

She took a good look. ‘Who is this if it isn’t Jenson?’

Josephine thought that she was experiencing some supernatural phenomenon. She remembered that ‘Jenson’ was at City South’s Horizon Colors last night, no?

“Jenson, why are you here?” Josephine was flabbergasted when she asked him.

Jenson lifelessly said, “It’s a long story,” he replied with four words.

This arrogant boy who wished he could speak less made Josephine at the brink of collapsing once again. “It can’t be. Why are you back to this annoying and arrogant attitude?”

Jenson could not be bothered about her.

Rose said, “Ms. Ares, if you have any

questions, save them for when we get to my house.”

Josephine nodded sullenly.

Rose moved to a new house at Exuberant City Apartment situated in City South, just a few streets away from Grand Asia.

A small two-bedroom apartment may not look spacious, but this one was clean and bright. Most importantly, the window had a magnificent view of Horizon Colors.

Josephine stood by the windowsill overlooking Horizon Colors and sighed. “The most dangerous place can also be the safest. Sister-in-law, you’ve made such an intelligent move.”

Rose served her a cup of water and explained, “I moved here for Jenson’s sake. I thought that perhaps with me closer to Horizon Colors, it can give him a better sense of security.”

Josephine glanced at the two children obediently sitting on a stool in the living room. Jenson was as dignified as a prince while the little girl was cute and cuddly

like a little elf.

“Sister-in-law, I’m very confused. I have so many questions, but I don’t know where to start.” Josephine scratched her head, feeling rather frustrated.

Rose gracefully said, “It’s okay. We have plenty of time. Just slowly ask away whatever you want to know. I’ll be truthful.”

Josephine was shocked.

She heard her brother once mention that Rose Loyle was a pathological liar. That was the reason why her brother was conflicted about letting Rose near Jenson.

“You won’t lie to me?” Josephine cautiously asked.

Rose understood that her trustworthiness seen in the eyes of the Ares family was probably close to none. She said, “Ms. Ares, you can listen to my side of the story first. With your level of intelligence, it’ll be easy for you to decide if my words are true or false.”

Josephine eagerly asked the question that

had been bothering her. "Why is Jenson here? Sister-in-law, he should be with my big brother now."

"Yes, technically, he should be with your brother. However, your brother made a grave mistake. Jenson does not have autism, nor does he have schizophrenia, but Jay was adamant about getting him treated. Isn't it a joke? That's why I kept Jenson with me." Rose calmly explained.

Josephine became emotional. "Sister-in-law, this isn't fair to my brother. You may have delivered the child, but do you know the price my brother has paid to raise Jenson? To take care of Jenson's emotional health, he dismissed all the nannies and drivers and no longer dares to go on dates. He's taken on the responsibility of being both a father and mother to Jenson. The moment you came back, you snatched his precious son away from him. Have you considered his feelings?"

Rose replied, "I'm not that cruel. I'm also a mother. I can understand the pain of separating with your loved one very well.

Don't worry, I won't do such a thing." 1

Rose's eyes turned red and teary as she thought about Baby Robbie whom she had sent to Jay.

Josephine looked at Jenson and angrily spat. "But the truth is in front of me. Jenson is with you."

Readers also enjoyed



A Dangerous Atrophy

jane dunn

Tragedy

Pessimist

492.5K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 75

Jenson and Zetty heard the quarrel between their mommy and Josephine. They looked at both adults worriedly.

Josephine looked at Jenson's cold and expressionless little face and recalled that cheerful and active boy who was with Jay. She felt as if her heart had been stabbed by a knife.

She suppressed the sorrow in her heart and tried to maintain her composure. "Sister-in-law, your appearance has caused Jenson's emotions to be unstable. My brother has hired Grand Asia's top specialist to treat Jenson's condition. His prognosis is not too promising. This child's mild autism has progressed into schizophrenia. I hope that you can let the innocent child go. Just go along with my brother's arrangement and leave the country!"

Josephine's love toward Jenson was evidently overflowing. Rose did not get angry. Instead, she smiled.

Jenson heard Josephine claiming that he was ill. He scrunched his little nose and chided impolitely at Josephine, "Crazy!"

Jenson knew that he was not ill. One day, his psychotic aunt was going to be the death of him.

Josephine was triggered by Jenson's unappreciative response. She curled her hand into a fist and marched over to Jenson, threatening, "Jenson, do you believe that I'll punch you?"

Jenson ran over to Rose, and she immediately carried him.

Josephine was dumbfounded to see how reliant Jenson was as he hugged Rose's neck.

Rose said to Josephine in a friendly manner, "Ms. Ares, you have misunderstood me."

Josephine looked at Rose whose expression was solemn and serious.

Josephine suddenly took out her phone. She was going to call her big brother to

confirm that Jenson had left Horizon Colors to quash Rose's lies.

The phone rang a few times before a man's rich and magnetically enchanting voice was heard. "Hello..."

"Big Brother, where is Jenson?"

Josephine widened her eyes like a fighting bull, staring straight at Rose.

The person on the other line paused for a moment. It was followed by Jay's dumbfounded voice. "Jens is having breakfast with me. Why?"

Josephine's provoking gaze suddenly changed as she became flustered and shocked. "What did you say?"

Rose was worried that she would say some things that should not be revealed, so she quickly went over, grabbed Josephine's phone, and ended the call.

Josephine looked like a statue that was staring at Rose. After some time, her soul finally returned as she said, "There are two Jensons?"

Suddenly, her mind was filled with all the

different transmigration novels she had read before. Her imagination was running wild. “From autism to schizophrenia, from transmigration to split bodies... F*ck, is this a real-life transmigration fantasy?”

Jenson reached out his little hands and heavily slapped the crown of Josephine’s head. “Take your medication since you’re ill.”

Zetty immediately poured a cup of water and passed it to Josephine. “Aunty, it’s time to take your medication.” She then handed Josephine a jellybean.

Josephine felt awkward from Zetty’s cute behavior. “I’m not ill,” she exclaimed helplessly.

Jenson said with hatred, “Retribution!”

Josephine glared at Jenson. “Damn you! How dare you speak to your aunt this way?”

Rose did not hold back from ridiculing Josephine. “Ms. Ares, how does it feel to be treated like you have an illness when

you don't?"

Josephine's brain was all mushed up now. She humbled her tone and persuaded Rose, "Sister-in-law, please tell me what is going on. Why do we suddenly have two Jensons?"

Rose revealed a gentle motherly smile. There were not two Jensons. They were just her identical twin babies.

Zetty was a kind girl. She blinked her innocent eyes and explained to Josephine. "There aren't two Jensons. One is called Jenson, and another is called Baby Robbie!"

Chapter 76

“Two children?” Josephine experienced an epiphany.

Rose nodded. She started explaining to Josephine. “Yes. Jenson and Baby Robbie are identical twin brothers. The reticent, cold, and handsome one is the older brother, Jenson. The energetic, cute, sunny, and handsome one is the younger brother, Baby Robbie. A few days ago, these brats switched identities behind our backs. The cold Jenson and energetic Baby Robbie took turns appearing in front of you all, causing so much distress to everyone.”

Before Rose could finish her explanation, Josephine excitedly cupped Jenson’s face and happily cheered. “So our Jenson is not ill after all!”

“Yes, you’re the one who’s ill,” Jenson said with displeasure.

Josephine sheepishly touched his face and apologized to Jenson. “I’m sorry

Jenson. Aunt Josephine misunderstood you.”

Jenson despised Aunt Josephine touching his face very much. He turned around and buried his face into Rose’s arms, seeking shelter from his mommy.

Josephine was blatantly disregarded by her nephew, so she bitterly reproached him, “Jenson, why do you let your mommy hug you but won’t let me do the same?”

After teasing Jenson for a bit, Josephine’s interest shifted toward the angelic Zetty. Zetty had naturally wavy hair. Her fair skin was like gelatin or egg white—fragile and easily blown apart. The pair of shimmering and shining autumn pupils glowed with innocence. Her large eyes were like obsidian stones, glowing like the stars and moon against the night sky. With her dainty little mouth and sharp little nose, she looked like an exquisitely made doll.

Josephine took a close look at Zetty and was unable to part from this cute and soft

little girl.

She walked over and carried Zetty. "Sister-in-law, who is this little angel? She is extremely cute. She should become the Ares family's child bride!"

Rose laughed.

Jenson rolled his eyes, speechless at Josephine. "Crazy."

Josephine gritted her teeth in anger when Jenson repaid her noble deed with complaints. "Little brat, Aunt Josephine is searching for a wife for you. Why are you being a jerk?"

Jenson's expression darkened.

Zetty laughed as well. "Aunt Josephine, were you a bad student? Don't you know that siblings cannot get married to each other?"

Josephine was already suffering a blow from Jenson's contempt earlier. She did not expect that this cuddly cutie would ridicule her as a bad student as well!

"I was not! My results during my student

days were excellent! I would get first place every term.”

Jenson unceremoniously said, “From the bottom.”

Josephine was not going to lose in this argument. “Nonsense. I was at the top.”

Zetty said, “Oh, I understand now. Aunt Josephine’s class only had one student back then?”

Josephine was angered so much by these two cute children that she nearly spat blood.

Zetty ran over to pull on Jenson’s hand. “Big Brother, let’s play with some toys.”

Jenson slid down from his mommy’s arms, held Zetty’s hand, and swaggered past Josephine.

Josephine looked at the two children holding hands and was suddenly brought back to the present. Her pupils widened like a fighting bull. “Si-siblings?”

She looked at Rose with a plea for an answer. “Sister-in-law, who is that little

girl?"

Rose replied, "My third child, Rozette Loyle."

Josephine still looked confused. "You've remarried?"

Rose replied, "Triplets."

Josephine was petrified. "My big brother is so amazing!"

Readers also enjoyed



Loveless Marriage: My Dear Ex,...

Marriage

Sweet

President

202.7K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 77

Rose and Josephine were now conversing after the shocking reveal. For Rose, this discussion was going to affect the course of her remaining life. She might look as if she was engaging in a casual and friendly chat, but she was inwardly being careful with her answers.

“Ms. Ares...”

Josephine affectionately pulled Rose’s hand and corrected her. “Sister-in-law, just address me by my name. Since you’re Jens and the kids’ mommy, then you will forever be my sister-in-law. Don’t be so distant.”

Rose corrected herself sincerely. “Josephine... Now that you know the existence of Baby Robbie and Zetty, I don’t know what actions you’re planning to take next? Are you going to reveal everything to Jay or are you going to help me hide the truth?”

Josephine did not understand. “Why can’

t I tell my brother? As the father of these kids, he has the right to know of their existence? Sister-in-law, my big brother will be elated to know that Baby Robbie and Zetty exist.”

Zetty raised her head and said to Josephine, “Daddy doesn’t like me. He said I am a mannerless wild child. I don’t like him either, hmph.”

Josephine was rendered speechless. This pair of father and daughter had not officially met, yet they already held a grudge toward each other?

Rose distractedly said, “Indeed, your brother will be elated, but I will be heartbroken to death. Josephine, it’s true that your brother loves his children, but at the same time, his hatred for me is real as well. For the sake of the children, he will turn this into a child custody court case. Tell me, with his immense power versus my powerless self, what am I going to use to fight against him?”

“Sister-in-law...” Josephine was beginning to realize that probably only

Rose could understand the helplessness and heartache she was going through while carefully hiding Baby Robbie and Zetty all these years.

“Josephine, it was a suicide wish the moment I fell in love with your brother. I stepped on his tail the moment I secretly gave birth to these three children against his wishes. Right now, he can’t wait for me to get lost from his sight. It’s painful enough for me to lose the love of my life. Losing my dignity and decency in front of him is even sadder. I don’t want to lose the only connection I have left with him... I beg you, please leave the children with me.”

Tears were rolling in Rose’s eyes. She had never humbled herself so lowly before, but she knew that if she could not convince Josephine to stand on her side, she was going to lose everything.

She was going to be left with nothing!

Josephine held on to Rose’s hand, looking at her helpless and pitiful demeanor. Josephine’s heart ached for her as well.

Josephine and Rose shared the same fate — falling in love with a man who did not reciprocate.

Josephine had once experienced a similar humility of loving yet not receiving.

Years ago, despite being the young lady of the Ares family, she traveled miles just to visit the man she had feelings for. She did this all for the sake of love. However, the first thing he said to her was an icy question, “Why are you here?”

At that moment, her heart had stopped.

Prior to their encounter, she had imagined and fantasized all sorts of responses he was going to give her. They all burst like bubbles when he asked her that.

It was then that she realized that in love, sincerity alone was not enough to stir a man’s feelings if he had no feelings for you in the first place.

‘It’s right for Rose to have that kind of concern because it’s crystal clear to her that she has no way of waking up my big

brother's sleeping soul.

'If a man does not love you enough, he will be more vicious and cruel compared to a woman.'

"Sister-in-law, don't worry. I will stand on your side no matter what. However, can you promise me, even if it's for the sake of the children, don't give my brother the death sentence just yet?

Maybe one day, my big brother will find it in him to accept you. Can you give him another chance?" Josephine heroically exclaimed.

Chapter 78

Rose smiled comfortingly.

However, her smile turned slightly bitter at the mention of Jay. She had loved him over two lifetimes. To forget him was easier said than done.

“To be honest, I’m still waiting for him at the same spot all this while,” Rose said softly.

Josephine was completely convinced by Rose’s strong, persevering, and steadfast spirit. She was in complete awe with Rose.

“Sister-in-law, for what you have said, I’ll protect you under my wings for life. Just stay here peacefully. I will tell my brother that you have left the country.”

Rose gratefully said, “Josephine, thank you.”

Josephine replied, “You’ve given me three extremely cute nephews and nieces. I should be the one thanking you instead.”

Zetty leaned on the door panel and said

pitifully, "Mommy, when will your conversation be done? Jenson and I are waiting to be fed."

Rose was abruptly reminded that the time was quite late now. She immediately put on the apron and headed into the kitchen. "Mommy will cook something delicious right away."

"Sister-in-law, I'd like to eat here as well."

"Alright!"

Bowls of tomato egg noodles were served for breakfast. Both Jenson and Zetty had a full bowl each. It was Josephine's first time eating such a simple breakfast, but she was enjoying it very much as Rose's cooking was excellent.

"Sister-in-law, my brother must have his eyes covered with bird droppings.

How can he not appreciate such a good woman like you who can cook so well and at the same time is pleasant enough to be shown in public? You're like the perfect example of how a good wife should be!"

Josephine was not saying that to butter

Rose up. Instead, she genuinely wished that they could have met much earlier.

Rose smiled. "I'm hoping it's true that your brother's eyes are covered with bird droppings. I'm living so close to his mansion, so I won't know what to do if I accidentally bump into him one day."

After Josephine finished her noodles and pushed the bowl aside, she stood up before saying, "Don't be afraid, Sister-in-law. I'll be a spy at Horizon Colors right now. With me around, I guarantee that you'll never meet my brother... Unless he has decided to reflect on his ways!"

Rose finally relaxed.

After Josephine left Exuberant City, she went straight to Grand Asia.

The thought of Rose taking care of two children on her own while being careful to avoid her brother made Josephine's heart ache sourly.

She decided to ask for a sum of money from her brother as financial support for raising the kids.

At the same time, Jay was walking into his office. He glanced over at the assistant's table. It was left abandoned and empty. 'Good. This woman has finally left my world forever.'

He opened his computer and remembered that he had disguised himself as a hacker to attack Qilin's database the day before to make things difficult for Rose. If he did not fix it himself, his subordinates were going to use a long time to break his coding.

Once the computer loaded, Jay was shocked to find that the webpage was back to normal operations...

Jay raised his eyebrows as he stared at the screen. Rose had deciphered his coding?

Chapter 79

How could that illiterate country bumpkin be the same woman who broke his coding?

Josephine knocked on the door. Jay, who was deep in thoughts, looked up and nodded his head in her direction.

He eagerly asked, "Where is Rose?"

Josephine squeezed out a triumphant smile.

"As per your orders, she has boarded the flight that will head across the ocean. She took the early morning flight at 6.45 am to Indonesia. Big Brother, you can be at ease from now on. You will not see her ever again."

A complicated gaze rose within Jay's expression.

His curiosity toward her stopped the moment he heard Rose left.

Josephine stretched out her hands in

front of Jay, asking for credit, "Big Brother, since I've done a huge favor for you, you should reward me with something, no?"

Jay swatted away Josephine's hand. "You're lacking money?"

Josephine nodded. "Yes, very much."

She intended to buy a huge house for Baby Robbie and Zetty. The Ares family could not allow their descendants to suffer.

She also planned to improve Rose's financial situation. Baby Robbie and Zetty should study in the best kindergarten.

Jay looked suspiciously at his sister. "What do you need the money for?"

"To be a sugar mommy." Josephine cheekily blinked her eyes at her brother.

Goosebumps rose all over Jay. "How much?"

"50 million!" Josephine gritted her teeth and named a huge sum.

Jay looked at Josephine. Using his

meticulous logic, he tried to see through her lies. "I'm very curious about what sort of brother-in-law you've found for me? In my point of view, the higher status the man has, the more unlikely he needs his woman to fork out for money."

Josephine retorted, "Big Brother, it's the top gigolo at the nightclub!"

Jay's expression darkened.

Josephine then said with all seriousness, "Big Brother, I want to buy a mansion."

"Reason?" Jay questioned.

"I'm a grown woman and want some private space. On nights when I feel lonely, I can bring a man back to dispel that loneliness. It's not suitable to live at home."

Jay frowned while Josephine chuckled. The more she spoke, the more nonsense was being spewed. "We girls are not the same as you men. You all like your five fingers, but we..."

Jay could not tolerate listening further. He took out a diamond card from his

drawer and threw it at Josephine. "Get lost!"

Josephine had achieved her goals and kissed the card as she excitedly squealed. "I have money!"

Jay coldly nagged, "Girls should be more protective of their chastity."

Before Jay could turn this into a lecture, Josephine immediately ran out along with the card.

Jay immediately realized after she left that he had been fooled by that little sister of his.

Josephine had matured earlier than her peers and was once head over heels with that jerk, Zayne Severe.

Unfortunately, Zayne was a man who did not believe in romance. He changed girlfriends as if he was changing clothes. The only person who never changed was that immature gay friend who had grown up together with them—Francis Greene.

Jay had warned Zayne that he should either stay away from Josephine or loyally

love and marry her. ⓘ

Zayne eventually chose to stay away from Josephine.

AMP20 WORK

Chapter 80

Josephine had been rejected by Zayne no less than three hundred times, but she was bent on loving him.

To get rid of Josephine, Zayne even swore an oath. "Ms. Ares, I beg you to let go of me. I'm not worthy of your love. My sexual preference is unlike a normal guy. I'm bisexual."

He thought that by saying that, Josephine would give up on him. Who knew that Josephine would dress up as a boy and approach him again, confidently saying, "Brother Severe, look, I can be a boy and a girl. I can give and receive. Choose me because I can cure your illness."

Zayne had nearly died from vomiting blood.

Just like that, one pursued while the other ran. In the view of others, they were a match made in heaven. However, it was this same reason that they dragged on and wasted their youth. Now that they

were both adults, they were still single and unmarried.

If Josephine could forget Zayne and develop feelings for other men, Jay felt that the Ares family should pop a bottle of champagne to celebrate.

So what was Josephine's intention of asking him for money?

Jay connected to the phone outside his office. "Grayson, come over."

Grayson arrived at the presidential office. "President, what are your orders?"

"Hire an intelligent private investigator to watch over Josephine like a hawk."

Grayson's eyes widened. "Since when did this pair of siblings become enemies out of love?"

"President, this isn't an easy task. She is the criminal investigations department's outstanding graduate. Investigating her will be more difficult than ascension to heaven."

Jay disagreed. "You've exalted her far too

much. She is the infamous young mistress of the Ares family.”

Grayson sweated. His president’s poisonous tongue had no mercy for members of his own family as well.

“Yes, I’ll get it done.” Grayson left immediately.

“Come back!” Jay seemed to have remembered something. Grayson turned back to hear his president’s gloomy voice. “By the way, how is Rose Loyle’s mother doing lately?”

Grayson was astonished. The president had just kicked Rose to some deserted country, but the next moment, he was being merciful toward her mother?

“To answer that, the patient’s condition is stable. A kidney transplant procedure can be arranged a week later.”

“Okay. You can take her out of isolation from today onward.”

“Noted.”

Josephine took the wealth she had

cheated out of Jay and went on a shopping spree at the children's section at various shopping malls.

Finally, she carried all the small and big shopping bags into her car, planning to bring those gifts to Jenson and Zetty back at Exuberant City.

At the same time, Josephine's every transaction was all sent in the form of messages to Jay's phone.

Jay was puzzled as he looked at the messages.

Everything Josephine bought was children's items. Like it was being copied and pasted, she purchased each item in threes.

There were more suspicious signs when she bought children's clothing. She would buy two sets of boy clothes and a similar set of girl clothes.

Jay found it unexplainable. If Josephine was buying clothes for Jenson, she would not need to buy them in two sets. Plus, she was buying clothes for a girl as well. ①

However, if she was not buying them for

Jenson, why did the sizes fit Jenson?

‘What is this girl up to?’

His mind recalled that fateful thunderstorm five years ago. Josephine had looked disheveled and pathetic...

Jay painfully closed his eyes.

Readers also enjoyed



Revenge of the Hideous Lady

Love

lovestory

Romance

175.7K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 81

His mind recalled that fateful thunderstorm five years ago. Josephine had looked disheveled and pathetic. She was covered in blood...

Soon, Jay received a call from Grayson to report on Josephine's movements.

"President, after Ms. Ares left Grand Asia, she went to the real estate office opposite Grand Asia to look at some property.

Subsequently, she visited a few malls and bought many children's items. Now, Ms. Ares is heading in the direction of Exuberant City.'

"Exuberant City?"

Jay frowned. Exuberant City was a middle-class apartment. However, Jay had heard about it because it was located in one of the expensive real estates within City South, and it was near Horizon Colors as well.

'Why is Josephine heading to Exuberant

City?'

"Alright, noted." Jay hung up the call, raised his wrist, and took a look at his watch. He switched off his computer and left the office.

'Exuberant City is just a stone's throw away from Grand Asia. Let me personally find out what tricks are up Josephine's sleeves.'

On the ground floor of Exuberant City.

Josephine happily drove her car that was filled with children's items into the entrance of Exuberant City and headed for the underground car park.

However, Jay's slender and tall figure suddenly appeared within her visual field. She immediately floored the brakes in shock.

Josephine lowered the car window and frightenedly looked at Jay. "Big Brother, why are you here?"

Jay's sharp gaze landed on the colorful pile of things at the back seat.

"What are these?"

Josephine had always feared Jay.

Many years ago, their parents had relegated the responsibility of disciplining the rebellious Josephine to Jay.

At first, she was rejoicing that her parents had given up on controlling her. Unfortunately, Jay used the same ruthless ways he used in his business on her. She was soon trained into an obedient child.

He had sent her overseas because of her crush on Zayne Severe. Not only that, but Jay even threatened Zayne that if he dared to get in touch with Josephine, he would only have two options—marry Josephine or wait for his family to go bankrupt.

Since then, Zayne saw Josephine as his number one enemy and blacklisted her contact, avoiding her as much as he could.

As time went, Zayne seemed to have disappeared from her world, leaving her with unrequited feelings.

Josephine then transformed from a

young lady who lived and breathed love into a headstrong woman.

“Big Brother, can't you see? These are children's items.” Josephine acted like she was doing nothing wrong as she tried to brush him off.

Jay's expression turned icy. “Who are they for?”

Josephine noticed the cold and strict expression on Jay's face. She suddenly realized why he was anxiously angry.

Tears covered Josephine's eyes. When she spoke, her voice was low. “Big Brother, you can't be thinking that I'm keeping that child from five years ago, can you? Don't worry, I've aborted it.”

Jay's expression remained icy. “So who did you buy these for?”

“Of course they are for my Jenson.”

Josephine quickly resealed that painful memory and resumed her frivolous behavior. “Big Brother, I used the money you gave me to buy some clothes and items for Jenson. You can't blame me for

this, can you?"

"Josephine, you're buying girl's clothes and toys for Jenson as well?" Jay was fuming from Josephine's uncooperative behavior.

Josephine pinched her forehead. She felt that her IQ would decrease whenever she was up against Jay.

However, she remembered her promise to Rose, thus she kept encouraging herself not to mess it up.

"Oh, I bought those for a friend's daughter." Josephine saw the look of disbelief in Jay's eyes and tried her best to cook up a story.

"My friend's pair of fraternal twins is now around Jenson's age. I just bought some stuff for them while buying for Jenson too.

"You don't know how pitiful that friend is. Her husband left her after she got pregnant.

"As a woman living alone and raising two children, her life is rather arduous. Since

I was overseas for the past few years, I didn't know about her condition. Now that I know about it, how can I not do something within my means?"

"Her name?" Jay was not easily fooled this time.

Josephine returned to the country not too long ago. Before she left the country years ago, Zayne was the only one who had occupied her mind. Therefore, she did not have many genuine friends.

Her explanation was full of suspicious points.

"Her name is Adeline!" Josephine blurted.

"Adeline?" Jay repeated the name a few times but did not find anything suspicious about it.

What gave Josephine away was her guilty expression.

Jay said, "Josephine, you better not be lying. You should know the consequences of lying to me."

With that said, Jay resumed his usual

dignified look. "Pass Jenson's gifts to me."

Josephine's first response was to reach for the black series Lego, but she recalled that the one in Horizon Colors was not Jenson. It was the energetically cute Baby Robbie.

She then put down the Lego and retrieved the green series Lego before passing it to Jay.

Jay squinted his eyes. 'Josephine is well aware of Jenson's preference from a young age. Why did she let go of the black series and took the green series Lego for Jenson instead?

'Furthermore, it seems that she only made the swap after giving it some thought.'

Josephine then passed a pile of clothes to Jay. She had bought identical pieces of clothing, so there was nothing suspicious there.

"Big Brother, I shall get going."

Josephine needed to get away from this

cold-faced devil. She was so frightened that she was sweating buckets now.

“Hmm,” Jay responded.

Josephine breathed out a sigh of relief and quickly made a getaway.

The suspicion in Jay’s eyes deepened.

He shifted his gaze on the skyscraper in front of him. There were gold letterings stating ‘Exuberant City’.

This was the poorest address within City South’s upper-class area. 3

Josephine’s friends were usually from the extremely rich. They would not be living in such a high-density, tiny apartment.

‘Ha, I’m curious now. Who is this friend of Josephine’s?’



Sir Ares, Goodnight!

Yan An

Language: English

Even after two lifetimes, Rose still could not melt the ice-cold heart of Jay Ares. Heartbroken, she decides to live under the guise of an idiot, tricking him and running away with their two children. This infuriates Sir Ares to no end, and everyone around them is certain that this will prove to be Rose's ultimate demise. However, upon the next day, the great Sir Ares is seen getting down on one knee in the middle of the street, coaxing the little brat, "Please be good and come home with me!" "I will, but only if you agree to my terms!" "Speak your mind!" "You are not allowed to bully me, lie to me, and especially not show your displeased face at me. You must always regard me as the most beautiful person, and you must smile whenever I cross your mind..." "Fine!" Onlookers are floored at sight of this! Is this the myth of how there is a



Read

Chapter 82

Josephine anxiously arrived at Rose's rented unit and plopped all the shopping bags and gift boxes on the sofa. She then patted her chest that was still feeling some residual fear.

She said to Rose, "Sister-in-law, what should I do? My brother is suspicious of me. He sent someone to follow me around. I bumped into him downstairs earlier."

Rose's relaxed expression immediately turned pale. The cup in her hands shook tremendously as she stuttered, "Your brother is downstairs?"

Josephine saw how Rose turned into a coward within a split second and laughed. "Sister-in-law, I thought that you're the only person in this world who isn't afraid of him and even dares to bicker or go against him. It turns out you're merely an origami tiger?"

Rose guiltily said, "You know how

ruthless your brother can be at work. Which of those who went against him ever lived to see a good ending? If your brother knew that I'm still here, pulverizing me will not be enough to quench his hatred for me."

Josephine patted her shoulders. "That's too hyperbolic. The most my brother will do is take away both your cute babies and make sure that you won't be able to survive here by preventing you from getting a job. You'll just be left to die on your own."

Rose looked at Josephine, dumbfounded. "So it's better if he takes my life instead?"

Josephine looked at her guiltily as she said, "What shall we do then? Move houses again?"

Something struck Rose, and she asked Josephine, "Why is your brother investigating you?"

Josephine's expression suddenly turned depressed.

After a sigh, she pulled out a long cigar

from her exquisite limited-edition handbag. She lit it with a lighter and inhaled deeply.

The bright sparks shone at her eyes, reflecting her tears that were like a vast ocean with surging waves.

Rose unceremoniously put out the burning cigar that was in between Josephine's fingers. "Nicotine and alcohol can never obliterate our sorrows permanently. Besides, I don't want Jens and Zetty to inhale your secondhand smoke."

Josephine placed the cigar on the glass side table and laughed bitterly. "Sister-in-law, do you want to hear my story?"

Rose saw the unappeasable amorous gaze within Josephine's eyes. It was exactly the way Rose was years ago, carrying so much despair. She had wanted to use her stubbornness and unwillingness to admit defeat to change her mediocre fate.

In the end, she had thrown herself into the vast ocean like duckweed, but she did not receive redemption. Instead, what she

got in return was infinite hatred.

“Tell me. I’m listening,” Rose gently said.

The tears in Josephine’s eyes rolled out even before she said a word. Her emotions brought her back to the time when she felt so unappeasable.

“When I was younger, I was very frivolous. I used to think that because I’m the young mistress of the Ares family and am quite attractive as well, I could chase after the man I fell in love with without a care in the world.”

At the mention of her past, those healed wounds in Josephine’s heart were once again torn open. The freshly torn wounds were bleeding, and the pain was so bad that her face scrunched up.

Rose behaved like a good listener, maintaining a calm composure while quietly listening to Josephine’s story.

“He is the young master of the Severe family in Swallow City, Zayne Severe. He is a very handsome man, humorous and witty as well. I fell hopelessly in love with

him the moment I first laid my eyes on him.

“Back then, I was full of innocence and couldn't wait to announce to the whole world that I liked him. I've done so many stupid things to pursue him.

Unfortunately, love is such a sacred thing. It's not something attainable by hard work alone. However, the more unattainable it was, the more obsessed I became. I even went as far as drugging him just to get him...”

When Josephine narrated this part of the story, her emotions began to waver. Her breathing turned ragged, and her complexion turned pale.

Even Rose did not appear as calm as she should. Her pupils widened with shock and consternation.

fChapter 83

The man Josephine mentioned was her elder brother, Zayne Severe.

Josephine's feelings for Zayne was like how she felt for Jay—tragic and lowly. They were like two moths toward the fire. Their endings may have been different, but they were equally poignant.

Rose felt as if there was lead stuck in her throat. She stood up, headed to the wine cupboard, and took out two bottles of red wine. She passed one to Josephine while the other was for herself.

“I think you need this,” Rose said.

Josephine gave a grateful smile. “Sister-in-law, you're truly a good friend.” She took the corkscrew and opened the bottle of wine. Once done, with two hands on the bottle, she tilted her head backward and gulped down the wine.

Traces of red liquid flowed down her neck and into her cleavage. She looked rather

appalling.

Rose smiled slightly. "You're the most un-aristocratic young mistress I've seen."

Josephine sniffled. "To hell with those etiquettes!"

Josephine drank half a bottle of wine in one go. The chatterbox in Josephine could not be switched off once she began. She continued to blabber on.

"Sister-in-law, do you know? I sold myself to get Zayne.

"The person I had sex with that night was not Zayne, but a lecherous hooligan. That man not only took away my innocence but made me pregnant as well.

"When my father found out about it, he was so mad that his blood pressure boiled, and he nearly died from it. Later, they handed me to my big brother... He got me to abort the baby and sent me abroad.

"Five years. Five whole years. Everyone thought that I went abroad to study. Nobody knew that I lived unlike a human

nor a ghost for the past five years...”

Josephine became emotionally unstable and cried out loud.

Rose pulled Josephine into her embrace while her own eyes had tears in them as well.

She gently patted Josephine’s back like she was comforting a baby.

“Josephine, don’t be sad. You should know that living in this world, no winter will not pass and no spring will not arrive. Take things one day at a time. Time will pull you out of it someday.”

Josephine looked up at Rose with teary eyes. “Sister-in-law, have you been living this way all these years as well?”

Rose nodded. “Yup.”

Josephine suddenly said excitedly, “Rose, it’s a pity that we didn’t meet earlier. Let’s be sworn sisters. What do you think?”

Rose did not know if she should cry or laugh, but she eventually nodded.

Josephine lifted her wine bottle and

acclaimed, "Let's cheers for an everlasting friendship."

The two ladies drank till they were tipsy. They forgot about the time and the children.

After a long time, Rose suddenly jumped up and yelled a blood-curdling scream. "Ahh... Jens and Zetty are still playing downstairs!"

Josephine immediately woke up from her tipsy state and murmured anxiously, "There won't be such an ill-coincidence that my brother will spot them, right?"

Chapter 84

It would have been better if nobody mentioned Jay. Every fiber in Rose's body stood straight at the mention of Jay's name.

"No, I must go down right away to hide the children. I can't let your brother find them." Rose swayed around as she fought to stand up.

Josephine threw the empty wine bottle into the dustbin and staggered along. "I'll go with you."

The two tipsy women hit and bumped their way downstairs. They could not tell which was the correct direction in that state of mind as they ran all over the place. Finally, they walked out of the apartment compound unknowingly.

Jay was outside the entrance waiting for his prey. When he saw Rose's face, that face that he would recognize even if it had turned into ashes, he was immediately coated with a layer of frost.

'Rose's tactics are truly extraordinary. First, she got Josephine to be loyal to her. Now that Josephine has been bewitched by her, they're working together to fool me.'

Jay squinted his eagle eyes, staring at the two women who were hand in hand and heading toward his direction.

Rose continued to walk straight ahead with her head hung low. When they reached where Jay was standing, Jay remained rooted to the spot and had no intention of giving way. Rose reached out to push him aside and chided, "Can you please watch where you're going? Move aside."

Jay was fuming mad as he demanded, "Josephine, care to explain what this is about?"

Josephine and Rose were frightened by that familiar voice that was laced with anger that they semi-sobered up. Both of them looked up fearfully at Jay...

Without much thought, Rose turned

around to run.

Jay immediately reached out his hand and pulled Rose's wrist. "Where are you running to?"

Rose used her free hand to cover her face, not wanting Jay to recognize her.

Seeing such a situation, Josephine loyally dashed up and pulled Jay's hand firmly as she said to Rose, "Rose, run away!"

Jay was displeased with his younger sister's attitude in helping outsiders. Because Josephine had used all of her strength to grab her big brother's hand, Rose got the chance to release herself and fled into the apartment.

"Josephine, who gave you the guts to wreck my plans!" Jay bellowed with unrestrained anger.

Josephine humbled herself and begged, "Big Brother, just let go of Rose, please. She's merely a weak woman. Why do you need to be such a big bully?"

Jay grabbed Josephine and stuffed her into the car that Grayson drove over with.

With a slam of the car door, he marched into Exuberant City Apartment to look for Rose.

“Big Brother, you may enjoy torturing your wife now, but you’re going to pay a hefty price for it later on!” Josephine pressed on the car window and shouted at Jay with all her might.

Jay paused his footsteps and turned around to glare at Josephine. “All I know is that the more I torture her, the more I’m enjoying it.”

When Jay entered Exuberant City, Rose had already hidden.

He did not manage to find Rose, but after a round of searching, he saw Jenson and Zetty at the playground.

Jay was so angry that he scoffed. ‘Heh, it turns out that Josephine secretly brought Jenson over to meet Rose.’

“Jens!” Jay walked over to Jenson. Jenson was flabbergasted upon seeing Jay.

When Jay was faced with his son, all his anger dissipated. He gave a warm smile

and said, "Jens, follow Daddy home."

Readers also enjoyed



A Dangerous Atrophy

jane dunn

Tragedy

Pessimist

492.5K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 85

Zetty suddenly dashed over with her fist pointed at Jay. "You're not allowed to bring my brother away."

Jay squinted his eyes slightly. He always had a severe headache whenever he met this little girl. She seemed to have a natural animosity toward him. She was always rude and rough with him. Unfortunately, he could not bully her because of his size and seniority.

'She is Rose's child with another man.' Jay could not find it in him to like Zetty when he thought about that.

"I'm bringing him back. You go look for your mommy." Jay coldly brushed off Zetty.

He carried Jenson and did not notice the tears welling up in Zetty's eyes. At such a young age, her daddy had trampled over her weak little heart. 'I knew it. Daddy loves sons and dislikes daughters.'

"Hmph. I hate you!" Zetty roared angrily

before dashing away.

Jay frowned. 'I don't recall ever doing anything to her. Why does this little girl seem like she holds such a huge grudge against me?'

Jay did not have the time to bother himself with a kid that was not his. He carried Jenson and left.

Jenson's gaze longingly followed Zetty as she ran further away. Jay saw how his son seemed to be very fond of Zetty, so he asked, "You like her?"

Jenson nodded. "Yes."

A short and simple answer without any unnecessary words. This style of answering was very Jenson-like.

Jay's expression darkened. 'I knew it. Each time Jenson meets Rose, his temperament will make a 180-degree turn.'

When Josephine saw that her brother had carried Jenson into the car, she quickly sent Rose a message. "Big Brother has taken Jenson away. You need to find a way

to get Baby Robbie back quickly.”

Rose whined in defeat. She immediately gave Baby Robbie a call, asking him to look for her at Exuberant City according to the shared location given.

The atmosphere in the car was heavily suppressed. Jenson was quiet, Josephine was trembling in fear while Jay was filled with anger. Different emotions intertwined in the air. Grayson felt that the air within the cabin could spark a flame any second, so he did his best to hold his tongue from speaking.

A long time passed before Jay spoke to interrogate Josephine. “Josephine, aren’t you going to explain why Jenson was at Exuberant City?”

Josephine was feeling befuddled. She was very much wrongly accused. She had nothing to do with Jenson being at Exuberant City.

“Big Brother, I just feel that my sister-in-law is very pitiful. She misses her child very much and wants to see Jenson. I felt soft-hearted for a moment and brought

Jenson over to Exuberant City.” Josephine chose to take the blame to protect Rose’s secret.

“Excessive tendency to clemency,” Jay chided.

He shot a glance at Jenson who was sitting quietly. Jay tried to suppress the angry storm that was brewing inside him and said with a low voice, “Just look at Jens. Why can’t you think for his sake?”

Josphine looked over at Jenson to see gratification in Jenson’s gaze over her misfortune. She nearly blew her top.

‘Jenson this little brat! How could I have hoped that he would help me in this situation? How dare he cast stones on my downfall?’

“Jens, tell your daddy that you were the one crying to beg Aunt Josephine to look for your mommy.”

Jenson shook his head. “I didn’t beg you.”

Josephine pulled his ear and whispered a threat, “Do you still want to see your mommy? If you do, you better play

Chapter 85

along.”

AMP20 WORK

Chapter 86

Jenson speechlessly looked askance at Josephine and suddenly questioned Jay, “Daddy, why won’t you let me see Mommy?”

There were traces of anger in his voice that shocked both Josephine and Jay.

Josephine sighed. ‘It’s a different ballgame when it’s Jenson taking action.’

Jay pinched on his brows that were throbbing and said, “Jens, you don’t understand what’s going on with the adults.”

There was stubbornness written all over Jenson’s cool and handsome face. “Then why are you involving the children if it is an adult issue?”

Jenson’s dissatisfaction toward his daddy increased. This was a first in history.

Jay was seated at the front passenger seat. Although nobody saw his expression, from the length of time he kept quiet, it

was obvious that he had suffered a severe blow from Jenson's rebellion.

Josephine gave a thumbs up at Jenson but said some teasing words, "Just wait for your daddy to settle the score with you later!"

Jenson rolled his eyes at her and ignored Josephine.

Grayson drove Jay and the rest back to Horizon Colors. Jay's sullen expression was coated with frost as he marched straight into the mansion.

Jenson and Josephine followed behind. Josephine walked with her head drooping. On the contrary, Jenson walked with his head held high and his chest puffed up.

After Jay sat on the couch, the other two stood in front of him looking contrastingly different.

Jay merely shot a look at Josephine before she cried out, "Big Brother, I've realized my mistakes. I will never be so merciful to help out those poor sheep that have lost

their way into the butcher's hands.”

The coldness within Jay's gaze melted a little. The reason why Josephine was able to empathize with Rose was because of the painful experience Josephine had gone through during her teenage years.

Those were Josephine's scars, and Jay could not bear to tear them open. He gritted his teeth and shifted his gaze toward the stubborn-looking Jenson.

“Jens, come here.” Jay stretched out his hand and softly coaxed.

It was only in front of his son that this cold-blooded, ruthless dark king of the business world would show the gentle and loving side of him.

Jenson was being unlike himself. He did not obediently place his little hands on his daddy's. Instead, he retracted his hands into his sleeves.

Jenson rejected contact with his daddy, and that action hurt Jay very much. When a male lion was injured, he would explode in self-defense. Ignoring Jenson's

wishes, Jay forcefully pulled Jenson into his embrace.

For the first time, Jay threw a temper at Jenson. "Daddy has loved you for the past five years, yet it cannot win against your short five days with her?"

Jenson felt wronged. 'I know that Daddy loves me very much, and I love Daddy very much as well. However, this has nothing with me loving Mommy, okay?'

"I love Daddy. At the same time, I love Mommy too."

"You're not allowed to meet her!" Jay growled at Jenson.

Jenson felt so wronged as tears welled up in his eyes, but he fought hard to keep them inside.

Josephine felt heartbroken for Jenson and pulled him into her arms. She then advised her brother, "Big Brother, don't shout at the child! It's by nature that a child will love their Mommy. It's cruel of you to ban Jenson from meeting Rose!"

Josephine should have kept quiet. She had

uncovered all of Jay's anger by speaking up.

Readers also enjoyed



The Pampering CEO: Don't Mes...

Marriage

Sweet

President

451.1K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 87

“If it wasn’t for you, why would Jenson be at Exuberant City?” Jay bellowed.

Josephine felt extremely wronged.

Jenson softly said, “Don’t scold her. I went to Exuberant City on my own.”

Jenson’s heart for justice did not allow him to tolerate his daddy accusing the wrong person, thus he stood up to admit his mistake.

Jay who was like an over-inflated balloon was burst by Jenson and deflated within seconds.

Josephine observed both father and son. Although Jay was fuming mad, the anger in his gaze would automatically plummet whenever he looked at Jenson. Josephine felt that she needed to protect herself first.

“Big Brother, it’s quite late now. I’ll go home first.” Josephine wanted to sneak away but was interrogated coldly by Jay. “

Why hasn't she left?"

Josephine's face scrunched up like a bitter gourd. She turned around and timidly replied, "Big Brother, she can't bear to part with Jenson."

Jenson's shoulders trembled slightly.

Jay shot a death glare at Josephine. "This lass is definitely a spy sent by Rose. Her careless answer has become Rose's strong assistance."

"You may leave," Jay said defeatedly.

Josephine immediately made a run for it.

After Josephine left, the enormous living room was left with a man and a little boy who were both looking quietly at each other.

Jenson suddenly walked up and gently hugged his daddy. "Daddy, I love you."

Jay's heart was so emotional that it trembled. Jenson was still his usual taciturn and coldly handsome self today.

However, there was a subtle change in him today. He knew that he needed to

stand up against power, but he also knew how to express love.

Jay suddenly enveloped Jenson tightly in his embrace. "Perhaps Daddy is wrong," he said unintentionally.

Once Josephine left the mansion at Horizon Colors, she immediately gave Rose a call to let her know that she was fine. When the call got connected, she immediately heard Rose's desperate wail. "Josephine, my Baby Robbie is missing!"

Josephine was dumbfounded, and the phone slid off her hands. When she found her thoughts again, she anxiously picked up her phone that was on the ground. "Rose, don't be anxious. Tell me about it!" she shouted across the line.

Rose's voice was choppy from crying. "Earlier when I was on the phone with Baby Robbie, at first he was still joking and chatting happily when suddenly he said the words, 'save me'. The next second, the line was cut off. I've tried to call him back, but the phone is switched off."

Josephine was so frightened that her whole body turned weak like jelly as she slumped ungracefully onto the ground. She mumbled, "It's all my fault. If Big Brother hadn't been worried about me, he wouldn't have appeared at Exuberant City. If he had not taken Jenson, then he would have gone to the kindergarten to fetch Baby Robbie..."

Rose cried in despair. Josephine heard Zetty's soft voice crying in the background, "Mommy, don't cry, don't cry. Big Brother will be fine..."

Josephine stood up and ran for her life toward the direction of Exuberant City.

When she arrived at the apartment, she saw Rose gripping on the phone as her hands shivered.

"Any updates?" Josephine walked over and anxiously asked.

Rose said, "The kidnappers must know that the children at Montessori Kindergarten have rich parents. They probably kidnapped Baby Robbie for

money. Josephine, I'm waiting for them to call me. I might need to report this to the police if there is no news within half an hour."

Josephine was out of ideas as well. In times of desperation, the only person she could think of who could help them was Jay. "Rose, why don't we tell my brother?"

Chapter 88

Rose shivered. Tears rippled in her pair of obsidian black eyes. At that moment, it was as if she had lost her judgment and was being swept around by the winds aimlessly.

Josephine could not bear to see Rose in that state. She clenched her teeth and said, "Or maybe let's just wait a little longer. If their motive is money, I still have a large sum that I cheated off from my big brother. It should be enough to feed those kidnappers' appetites."

Rose was feeling lost, and her mind was in a mess. She could not decide if she should seek help from Jay.

Rose's hunch was correct. The kidnappers had abducted Baby Robbie for money.

However, when the kidnappers forced Baby Robbie to give them his parent's phone number, Baby Robbie got worried that these kidnappers would frighten his

weak and helpless mommy, thus he gave them Jay's phone number without hesitation.

When the kidnappers dialed Jay's number to demand ransom, Jay and Jenson had made peace and were having their meal at the dining table.

His phone rang. Without giving much thought, Jay picked up the phone to hear a voice that had been processed through a voice changer. It creepily said, "Your son is in our hands. If you want him alive, bring us money in exchange for him. 100 million. I'll kill him if the money is short even by a cent."

Jay took a look at Jenson who was safe and sound. The corner of his lips curved into a smile. "You've got the wrong number!" Then, he unceremoniously hung up the call.

Jenson overheard what the kidnappers said. He was so frightened that his chopsticks and noodles fell to the ground.

Jay saw the fear in his son's expression. He put down his cutleries and walked

over to comfort Jenson. "It's just a call from scammers. They do not have any hostages."

Who could expect that Jenson would suddenly run out without a care? Jay looked dumbfounded at Jenson whose reaction was out of the norm. Then, he quickly gave chase.

"Jens, where are you going?"

Jenson ran as fast as he could in the direction of Exuberant City. Jay found it preposterous. 'Is this boy so frightened that he needs to seek his mommy for comfort?'

Jay's long legs soon allowed him to reach Jenson. In one quick swoop, he picked up Jenson. With defeat and helplessness, he said, "If you're heading to Exuberant City to look for her, Daddy will drive you there."

Jenson nodded vehemently.

Jay drove the car while Jenson sat at the back. He said one word, "Quick!"

Jay was feeling frustrated. He did not

want to send Jenson over to that woman he loathed so much, but somehow, he could not control himself from stepping on the gas pedal.

His car had just entered the entrance of Exuberant City when he saw Josephine carrying Zetty. They were stumbling as they ran out. Rose was with them too.

Josephine saw Jay's car and thought of him as a lifesaver at that moment. When she ran over, Jenson had already opened the door. Josephine carried Zetty into the back seat.

Rose sat at the front passenger seat.

Jay's anger was boiling rapidly. 'Doesn't she know how much I hate her? How dare she get into my car without my permission? Who does she think she is?'

He was about to blow up in anger when he heard Rose's shivering low voice, "Head over to the moat at the Eastern Bridge! Quick."

Jay angrily removed his feet from the accelerator. Just that split second of delay earned him a resounding "drive the car!"

from everyone inside.

Readers also enjoyed



Loveless Marriage: My Dear Ex,...

Marriage

Sweet

President

202.7K readers Recommend Reading

VAMP20 WOV

Chapter 89

That was especially true for Jenson. He was so emotional that his voice nearly turned hoarse!

Jay could not care less about the lives of anyone else in the car, but he could not be oblivious toward the emotions of his precious son. He was worried that Jenson's mental health would deteriorate further if Jenson became emotionally unstable.

Jay stepped on the accelerator, and the car sped off.

On the way, Jay was driving with a sullen face as he angrily asked Rose, "Don't tell me it's your son that has been abducted by kidnappers?"

Rose suddenly looked up in shock as she stared at Jay.

'Isn't my son your son as well? How can you speak those words so casually?'

Jay saw her lost expression, and a layer of frost coated his gaze as he said with

gripped teeth, "So I've guessed correctly. When did you give birth to this son? Before you got married to me or after you got divorced from me?"

Rose had no counterattack after being struck by Jay's mockery. She leaned her spineless back onto the seat's backrest. Tension, panic, suspicion, and mockery... She was facing all these from the father of her children. All these different emotions intertwined, and she felt like she was being thrown into a black hole.

Josephine could not tolerate seeing Jay bully a defenseless lady. She straightened her neck and shot back at her brother. "Big Brother, regardless if sister-in-law had Zetty before her marriage to you, or Baby Robbie after her divorce with you, as long as she did not cuckold you while being married to you, then she is not a bad woman."

From the reflection on the rearview mirror, Josephine saw the thick layer of frost in Jay's gaze. Her imposing voice turned meek as she continued, "If it isn't because we were unfortunate enough to

meet irresponsible men like you all, there's no reason we women wouldn't want to be loyal from start till the very end."

Jay angrily spat out his words, "Josephine Ares, shut up. Are you sympathizing with a woman who married three times and gave birth to three children with different partners? Haven't you heard that a person's pitiful situation can be attributed to their own fault?"

Rose looked at Jay with shock on her face. She had no way of clearing herself with the level of misunderstanding he had toward her.

She merely had a special genetic coding that allowed her to have triplets, but he misunderstood her for giving birth to children of three different men?

It all boiled down to him looking down on her. As he did not love her, he did not have even the most basic trust for her. Otherwise, with his sharp mind like Xuan Ming, he should have easily seen through her lies.

Rose chuckled bitterly. "My biggest

mistake is falling in love with a man who doesn't love me. Jay Ares, if I have the chance to start all over again, I wish that I never met you," Rose sorrowfully announced before opening the car door to get down.

Jay stepped on the emergency brakes so that Rose would not roll out.

The car had not fully come to a halt, but Rose hurriedly pushed open the door. She fled pitifully.

Jay was struck with anger from Rose's death wish. "Damn it!"

Josephine looked extremely speechless at Jay. She reprimanded him while opening the door, "Big Brother, all that you've said to sister-in-law today is because your brain has been flooded with water. One fine day, you will regret your actions till your intestines turn green."

Jay's frosty gaze locked on Rose's petite figure. If looks could kill, he would have executed Rose Loyle a hundred thousand times over.

Once Josephine got out of the car, Jenson

and Zetty followed suit.

Jay pondered many times, 'It's Rose's son who is missing now, but why is she letting my son be worried as well?'

LAMP20 WORK

Chapter 90

Jay looked at Jenson's anxious little face. He could not understand how Rose got his son to worry about her child that much.

The two were children from different mothers, and they did not grow up together. However, the level of intimacy between the children made Jay jealous.

Jay sighed frustratedly when he realized that he was jealous of his own son. He reluctantly took out his phone and dialed the number of his friend, a detective who had a perfect record of solving cases.

Then, Jay casually got out of his car. He quickly chased up to Jenson and carried him in his arms.

"It's very dangerous here, Jens. Come, follow Daddy home."

Josephine immediately rolled her eyes at him.

Her brother only cared for his son Jenson,

but he did not know that the kidnapped Robbie was also his son. Zetty, who hated him, was also his birth daughter. Rose Loyle was the mother of his three children, and Josephine Ares was his birth sister. Everyone present at the scene should have been very important to him, but he only had his precious Jenson in his eyes.

Josephine could not wait for the day when her brother finally found out the truth. That would have been quite the spectacle.

Jenson was very concerned about Baby Robbie. He did not want to leave.

"Daddy, save Robbie," Jenson clutched onto Jay's collar nervously. His petite face had turned pale out of fright.

Jay hugged Jenson tightly. "Don't worry, Jens. Daddy has already called the police. The police will come to the rescue soon."

Rozette pursed her lips when she saw her Daddy's indulgent expression as he spoiled her brother.

'Daddy only likes boys! Hmph! If he doesn

't like me, then I don't have to like him.'

Jay sensed the angry glare from Rozette and was shocked. He wondered if they were born to be enemies and did not understand why the little girl bore so much resentment toward him.

Rose heard that Jay had called the police. She knew that the kidnappers were all merciless outlaws. If the kidnappers were forced into a corner, they might kill the hostages. That would have been unimaginable.

"Why did you call the police? Don't you know that's very dangerous to the hostages?" Rose yelled at Jay. Her emotions were out of control.

Jay assumed an unconcerned expression. "I'm only calling the police because Jenson asked me to. Don't be so ungrateful. Do you think a poor woman like you can afford to pay the ransom? If I don't call the police, you can prepare to collect your son in a body bag!"

That was the outcome that Rose did not want to think about, but Jay had said it so

easily. Rose Loyle, in her frustrated anger, lifted a hand and delivered a slap to Jay Ares's face.

"Rose! Loyle! You dare hit me?" Jay Ares was livid. He grabbed Rose's wrist which caused her to gasp in pain.

"I slapped you because you deserve it," Rose said coldly. Her defiant temperament was brought to the surface again.

Josephine's jaw dropped when she saw that. The seemingly frail and delicate Rose Loyle had slapped her brother, and that had utterly shocked her.

Jay might have acted like a douchebag, but he was nonetheless the mighty Sir Ares!

Josephine was instantly worried about Rose.

Rozette saw Daddy bullying Mommy and screamed with all her might, "Let go of Mommy, you baddie!"

Jay glared coldly at Rose. "Is this how you educate your children?"

Rose glanced at Rozette who was crying up a storm, then at Jay who was staring at her coldly. Her heart was bleeding at that instant.

Only heaven knew that she wanted the father and daughter to be kind to each other, but Jay had always acted like a cold-blooded animal. He only liked sons because they could inherit his riches, and spared no love for daughters who did not get his recognition.

Readers also enjoyed



The Young Wife is Pregnant: Pa...

Marriage

Sweet

President

103.4K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 91

"I'm not in the mood to argue with you today, Jay Ares. I need to save my son," Rose's mind was preoccupied with Baby Robbie's safety. She did not have the energy to care about the consequences of angering Jay.

Jay gritted his teeth. His eyes were burning with rage. "Rose Loyle. You are the first person to beat me. I will remember this, and I will come back to this after your son is rescued."

"Whatever," Rose said tiredly.

Rose managed to get a reprieve from fighting with Jay because they had a child to save.

She received a call from the kidnappers again. "Transfer the money into my bank account..."

"How much?" Rose asked.

"Two hundred million!" The kidnapper doubled the ransom on the spot.

Rose did not have that much money. She could only look at Josephine helplessly.

Josephine displayed an awkward expression on her face. The card that her brother gave her had a limit of one hundred million. Where was she going to find the other half of the ransom?

Rose could read from Josephine's face that she was also helpless. She had no other choice but to turn to the richest person among them.

"Sir Ares, can you lend me some money?" She said, biting her lip. Her lip was bleeding as she squeezed those words out of her mouth.

The grudge of being slapped was still fresh in Jay's mind. It was the perfect chance to get back at her. "Beg me!" He said with a cold, sinister smile on his face.

"I beg you," Rose said drily.

"Is that how you beg for help? Don't tell me I can't get your legs to bend for two hundred million?" Jay furrowed his brows.

Rose tremblingly kneeled on the ground. Her tears could not stop falling. How humiliating it was to be shamed by the man she loved!

Josephine covered her eyes. She could not bear to see.

Her brother might be the victor for now, but she knew that her brother would soon regret it when he knew the truth.

Josephine could imagine that her brother's face would be a thousand times more dramatic than the scene right now when he discovered that Rose had borrowed two hundred million from him to save his son.

"Enough already. Can't you show a little mercy, Brother? It's just two hundred million, right? How about if I borrow it from you instead?" Josephine could not bear to watch anymore. She helped Rose on her feet.

Rose did not dare to stand up before Jay agreed to help her.

Jay glared angrily at his sister. "This is

none of your business. Step aside."

"Do you think that I'm helping her, Brother? I'm helping you," Josephine said.

Jenson suddenly hopped down from Jay's arms. "Stand up, Mommy. I have the money. I'll give it to you," he said to Rose.

Jay was incredibly frustrated that his son was not on his side.

Jenson stretched out a palm to his father. "Daddy, return my New Year's money to me."

Jay thought that it was incredibly tragic that his sister and son had turned on him.

Chapter 92

All he wanted was to teach Rose a small lesson. He did not expect that his sister and son stood on Rose's side. There was no joy in taking revenge on her.

He stretched out his impeccably manicured hand in front of Rose. "Give me your phone." His voice was dripping with resentment.

Rose hesitated because she did not know his intention.

Jay reached over and grabbed her phone. He glanced at the call notification from the kidnappers, then used Rose's phone to dial a number.

"Help me find the location of phone number 134***," Jay said coolly.

Rose was shocked. Was Jay helping her to rescue Baby Robbie?

After the call ended, Jay tossed the phone back to Rose like he was tossing away trash.

"Daddy, are you saving Robbie?" Jenson said expectantly.

"I'm doing this just for you!" Jay patted Jenson's head and said cloyingly.

Josephine pouted. She knew that her brother's vanity would one day be his undoing.

Jay might have been actively helping Rose to call the police and help in the child's rescue, but for Rose, she could not afford the slightest mistake. She had to be absolutely sure that Baby Robbie was safe.

The kidnappers wanted money. If she did not respond to their demand soon, she was afraid that they might harm Baby Robbie before the police could get there.

Rose slowly walked in front of Jay and said humbly, "Sir Ares, Baby Robbie means my life to me. I cannot lose him. Please, help me with getting him back safely..." Her tone of voice was low and subservient.

Jenson shook Jay's arm. "Please, Daddy, just help Mommy! Mommy only wants

"Daddy, are you saving Robbie?" Jenson said expectantly.

"I'm doing this just for you!" Jay patted Jenson's head and said cloyingly.

Josephine pouted. She knew that her brother's vanity would one day be his undoing.

Jay might have been actively helping Rose to call the police and help in the child's rescue, but for Rose, she could not afford the slightest mistake. She had to be absolutely sure that Baby Robbie was safe.

The kidnappers wanted money. If she did not respond to their demand soon, she was afraid that they might harm Baby Robbie before the police could get there.

Rose slowly walked in front of Jay and said humbly, "Sir Ares, Baby Robbie means my life to me. I cannot lose him. Please, help me with getting him back safely..." Her tone of voice was low and subservient.

Jenson shook Jay's arm. "Please, Daddy, just help Mommy! Mommy only wants

money. Can't you lend it to her?"

"There's no need," Jay said, "My friend can save your child without causing him any harm..."

Rose was too concerned about Baby Robbie. She started crying as she begged, "But I think I should just pay the ransom and appease the kidnappers! Please, Sir Ares, lend me two hundred million. I'll do anything you ask me to."

Jay stared at the Rose who had forsaken her dignity to ensure the safety of her child. He was a little taken aback by Rose's utterly different attitude at that moment. He seemed to have understood why Jenson preferred Mommy.

He knew that Rose was a prideful and cunning liar. However, at the moment, she was begging him earnestly.

Josephine could not bear to watch it anymore. She ran over, pulled Rose up, and yelled at Jay. "Brother, two hundred million is only loose change to you. Why must you degrade her dignity?"

"It's not a matter of lending her the

money. I do not believe in bowing to the kidnappers' demands," Jay said coldly.

Josephine saw that her brother had made up his mind. She turned to Rose instead. "Sister-in-law, my brother can be so calm watching from the sidelines because he doesn't know the truth. Do you think it's time for you to tell him the truth, for Baby Robbie's safety?"

Jay narrowed his eyes. Josephine's words had piqued him, but he pondered the words carefully and remembered that Rose was a pathological liar. He should not fall into another of her traps again.

What truth could she have?

Rose was caught in an agonizing dilemma. If she told Jay the truth, there was the risk that she might lose Baby Robbie. If she did not, Baby Robbie's life would be in further danger.

With tears in her eyes, Rose nodded. She could not afford to think for her own benefit. She would rather lose Baby Robbie as long as his safety was ensured.

Chapter 93

Josephine breathed a heavy sigh of relief when she received Rose's consent.

Josephine knew how hard it was for Rose to make that decision, which made her current mood extremely solemn as well.

She walked in front of Jay and said, "Brother, you might disagree with Sister-in-law's decision to pay the ransom, and you humiliate and mock her for borrowing two hundred million from you. However, if you meet Baby Robbie, you'll not only lend her that two hundred million. You'd even give her two billion if the kidnappers ask for that."

A hint of mockery appeared on Jay's face. "Josephine Ares, what makes you think that I would spend two billion on this woman? Do you know how much I hate her?" Jay's expression started to turn vicious.

Josephine opened her mouth slightly as she stared at Jay. Perhaps she was tired of arguing, and that was why she sounded

rather aloof. "You wouldn't spend two hundred million on your son?"

"But he's not my son..." Jay was furious.

"The child in the kidnapper's hands is your son," Josephine roared hysterically.

"What nonsense are you spewing? My son is right in front of me."

"Robbie and Jenson are identical twins," Josephine said.

Jay seemed to have understood something. His contorted face slowly relaxed and his vicious gaze turned gentle. What remained was an endless confusion.

"What did you say?"

"I said, Baby Robbie is your son. Your birth son. The real deal." Josephine said every word clearly and carefully.

Jay's brawny body trembled slightly. His bloodshot eyes flashed with absolute incredulity. He turned to look at Rose. Rose's unease and helplessness seemed to have infected him like a contagious

disease.

Josephine continued speaking. "Brother, if you love Jens, please extend the same love to Robbie."

Before she could finish her sentence, Jay took out his phone and transferred the money to the kidnappers with trembling hands.

Josephine breathed a sigh of relief.

Jay handed the car keys to Josephine. "Send them home now!" He said.

"Where are you going?"

"To the rescue." Jay tore away the necktie that restrained him, then took off his coat and threw it to Josephine. He sprinted away as though he was running a race.

Rose quickly got to her feet and wanted to chase behind. "Go back and wait for my news," Jay said. His tone of voice was a lot more friendly.

"You should take care too," Rose stammered.

"It's just a few kidnappers. There's

nothing to be afraid of," Jay said as his expression darkened.

Rose lowered her gaze. She did not mean to underestimate him. However, fighting with the kidnappers was nonetheless a risky endeavor, and she hoped that the father and son would return safely.

After Jay left, Josephine pulled the dazed Rose into the car.

"I'm so sorry, Rose. I told the truth to Brother. Please do not resent me for that," Josephine said guiltily.

Rose's hair was unkempt and her eyes were bloodshot from crying. "I don't blame you, Josephine," she said softly, "Even if you didn't say it, I will eventually have to tell him. As long as Robbie is safe, I don't mind losing him." ①

Chapter 94

Josephine sighed. Now that her overbearing brother knew that Baby Robbie was his son, he would definitely fight Rose for custody of the child.

What did Rose have to oppose him?

In terms of authority, her brother practically ruled the world.

In terms of money, her brother was the president of a company worth hundreds of billions.

Rose did not have any money or authority.

Josephine thought that the battle was over before it even began.

Fortunately...

Josephine turned around, glanced at Rozette, and thought of how to comfort Rose.

"Rose, I'll try to mislead my brother as much as I can. I'll tell him that Rozette is your daughter with your former husband.

However, my brother is a naturally distrustful person. To not raise his suspicion, I'll make up a story that you were married.

"We'll just have to match our stories so that he won't suspect anything. Don't worry, I'll try my best to make sure that you still have your daughter."

Rose nodded agonizingly.

Josephine sent Rose back to Exuberant City. Jenson did not want to be separated from Mommy, and so Josephine had to stay with him to wait for Baby Robbie's news.

Jay had nothing to worry about after he sent Jenson away. He searched every nook and cranny at Eastern Bridge for any traces of Baby Robbie.

The plainclothes police arrived soon. After the rendezvous with Jay, Captain Jean Walter, who was old friends with Jay, teased him, "Oh, Master Ares! Who got kidnapped? They must be someone important for you to attend to the matter personally."

Jay Ares looked at his wristwatch and said coldly, "You're late."

Captain Walter's jaw dropped. "I swear to God, I was in the bath when you called me and I did not dare to dawdle for a single second."

Jay's mood was sullen, though one could tell that he was impatient by looking at his eyes.

"Is the hostage some VIP, and that's why you're so worried?" Captain Walter asked.

"It's my son."

"Jenson?" Captain Walter immediately broke out in cold sweat. The hostage was truly a VIP indeed.

"No." Jay's expression was grim.

Captain Walter breathed a sigh of relief. "Master Ares, don't you have only one son? You've been keeping celibate over the past few years, and we've even been curious about your sexual orientation. Where did your second son come from?"

"Enough talk. Let's go save the hostages.

Let me warn you, if Baby Robbie loses half a hair, I'll claim half of your life," Jay said sternly.

"Don't worry, Master Ares. I'll start the operation right now."

Captain Jean Walter turned to address his subordinates. "Start the operation."

Soon after, a subordinate returned to report the situation. "Captain, the kidnappers are holding the hostages in the science museum. Should we storm the place or..."

"Storm the place? Are you crazy? Protect the hostages at all costs. Ensure that no harm comes to the hostages."

Jay's expression was sullen as he turned around and sprinted toward the science museum in great strides.

"Master Ares!" Captain Walter was worried and followed close behind.

Meanwhile, in the science museum, the dozen or so kidnappers tied up Baby Robbie like a rice dumpling and dumped him into a corner. There were a total of

five or six children there, the oldest being about twelve years old while the youngest could not have been more than three. The staff members of the science museum were all crouched on the floor with their hands on the walls. A kidnapper with a rifle kept a close eye on them.

"Boss! A group of people has surrounded the science museum. What do we do?"

"Lock the windows and doors. Everything here is a national treasure, and they wouldn't dare to be careless. Keep a close eye on what's going on outside. If it's the police, ready our weapons!"

"Yes."

Baby Robbie suddenly had an idea to divert the kidnappers' attention.

"Do you want more money?" He said, "Let me tell you, my Daddy is the president of Grand Asia. He has a lot of money! If you call my Daddy and ask him for five billion, he will gladly pay up."

The leader of the kidnappers looked at Baby Robbie. "You say that your dad is

the president of Grand Asia, boy?" He said gruffly.

Baby Robbie nodded obediently. He put up an innocent and cute face. The kidnappers did not suspect that he was a cunning prankster.

"What's your Daddy's phone number?"

Baby Robbie tilted his head and thought for a while. "My Daddy has several phone numbers. Try this one first." Then, he gave them a made-up string of numbers.

When the kidnappers dialed the number, they got an automated response that the number was not in service.

"Try this one instead," Baby Robbie gave them another made-up number. The kidnappers dialed that number and, as expected, no one picked up the call.

The kidnappers were getting impatient. Baby Robbie suddenly exclaimed, "Oh, right! Daddy wrote his phone number on my shirt. Try to look for that."

The kidnappers searched his shirt a few times but found nothing. Baby Robbie

pretended to look disappointed. "Hey, do you want to untie me so that I can help you find the number?"

The leader of the kidnappers was tempted by the astronomical figure of five billion. They did not expect a five-year-old child to cause too much trouble, and so he ordered one of his people, "Untie him."

After the ropes were loosened on Baby Robbie's arms and legs, he calmly massaged his wrists and ankles. Then, he stood up, and swiftly flung a loop of the coarse hemp rope around the leader's neck. He grabbed the other end of the rope, swung his body around, landed on the banister of the central spiral staircase, and slid down.

"You sly kid! After him!" The leader's voice was hoarse because his neck was being choked by the rope.

Baby Robbie waved goodbye to the kidnappers. "You rat-faced idiot! My Daddy's money is mine when I grow up. I won't give it to you!"

The kidnappers lifted their guns and

pointed them at Baby Robbie.

Readers also enjoyed



Twins in Her Womb: Sir Preside...

baby

Romance

Marriage

115.1K readers Recommend Reading

WAMP20 WOMB

Chapter 95

Baby Robbie was shocked. He immediately dropped on the floor and looked for a place to hide from the bullets. The plainclothes police surrounding outside heard the sounds of gunfire and stormed into the building. ①

Baby Robbie heard the intense sounds of gunfire. He found a bookcase and hid inside it.

Through a crack in the door, he could see Jay in his bespoke white shirt with the top button undone. He was as graceful as a sculpture, but at the same time savage as a wolf, especially his eyes that sparkled with a piercing coldness. Under the cover of the police, he dashed up the stairs.

Baby Robbie's heart was in his throat. There were more than a dozen kidnappers upstairs, and each one of them was wielding a deadly weapon. He was counting on the kidnappers to not use their guns. Otherwise, he would not have been so daring to escape.

The kidnappers were riled and they threw caution out of the window. It would be too dangerous for Daddy to go upstairs now.

Actually, Baby Robbie did not have to worry. His athletic prowess was inherited from his Daddy.

Jay Ares was the eldest grandson of the Ares family. Being born in a wealthy family might have allowed him to enjoy a pampered lifestyle as he grew up, but at the same time, he had also encountered many perils that normal children would not have to worry about. He had been robbed, kidnapped, and been in multiple vehicular accidents. Those occurrences were not out of the ordinary for him.

To protect him, the Ares family had hired renowned martial arts masters as his trainers. Jay had been training in martial arts continuously since he was a child. He was a champion in fencing and Chinese boxing. His physical prowess was extraordinary.

When Jay dashed upstairs, Captain Walter ordered his men to shield him in front.

Meanwhile, Captain Walter kept a close eye on the kidnappers in case someone fired at Jay.

The kidnappers were soon subdued.

Jay immediately ran to the kidnapped children. The five children looked eagerly at Jay, hoping that they would be the one to be rescued first.

Jay swept his eyes over the children. The children were of different ages and heights, but all of them looked innocent. None of the faces looked familiar.

"Which one of you is Baby Robbie?" Jay crouched close to the children and asked them. His expression was unbelievably gentle.

Captain Walter was surprised. Did Master Ares not know who his son was? What was going on?

None of the children replied. Jay furrowed his brows.

The veins on his forehead were bulging. ' Did I get bamboozled by Rose Loyle again? '

Meanwhile, Baby Robbie in the bookcase saw that the kidnappers were handcuffed and led out by the police with defeated looks on their faces. He knew that Daddy was safe now.

He clambered out of the bookcase. He did not go and look for Daddy. Instead, he ran home.

When the kidnappers were talking to Mommy over the phone, he could hear that she was crying. Mommy must be extremely worried about him, and he wanted to get back to her as soon as he could. Mommy needed to know that he was safe.

Jay's mood was at a low point when he did not find Baby Robbie. His body was instantly enveloped by an aura of frost. The temperature around him seemed to be lowered by several degrees.

The children who were in a shock had eventually recovered their senses. One of the older children spoke to Jay. "There was a boy who tricked the leader of the kidnappers and ran away. He might be

the Baby Robbie that you're looking for."

Jay narrowed his eyes, then turned around and ran downstairs.

As he ran, he could only think of one question. 'Is that child really Baby Robbie?'

'

Baby Robbie remembered the new address that Mommy gave him. He soon returned to Exuberant City.

When Rose saw Baby Robbie come home unscathed, she hugged him tightly and started crying. She was afraid that she had lost him.

"Mommy, I'm sorry for making you worry," Baby Robbie apologized softly.



Sir Ares, Goodnight!

Yan An

Language: English

Even after two lifetimes, Rose still could not melt the ice-cold heart of Jay Ares. Heartbroken, she decides to live under the guise of an idiot, tricking him and running away with their two children. This infuriates Sir Ares to no end, and everyone around them is certain that this will prove to be Rose's ultimate demise. However, upon the next day, the great Sir Ares is seen getting down on one knee in the middle of the street, coaxing the little brat, "Please be good and come home with me!" "I will, but only if you agree to my terms!" "Speak your mind!" "You are not allowed to bully me, lie to me, and especially not show your displeased face at me. You must always regard me as the most beautiful person, and you must smile whenever I cross your mind..." "Fine!" Onlookers are floored at sight of this! Is this the myth of how there is a



Read

Chapter 96

Josephine could not stop wiping away her tears. "Thank goodness you're safe, Jenson."

Rose glanced at the door and was suspicious. "Baby Robbie, where's Daddy? Why isn't he here with you?"

She thought that Jay would immediately come to her to discuss the child's custody rights.

Baby Robbie hugged Rose. "Daddy came to save me, Mommy. I am so touched. I didn't meet him though, because I don't want to leave Mommy."

Rose faltered. She sighed. "I'm sorry, Baby Robbie, Daddy knows about your existence now."

Robbie saw how dejected Mommy looked and sighed like an adult. "Don't worry, Mommy. Even if Daddy wants to snatch me away from you, I won't leave your side no matter what."

Mother and son hugged each other and cried, as though they were about to be separated forever. It was an emotional scene.

"He won't," Jenson said suddenly.

Josephine immediately switched to her trademark sharp tongue and chided Jenson. "What do you know, you brat? Your daddy is like a big ferocious tiger and only knows how to bully Mommy."

Jenson glared at Josephine. He did not allow his aunt to talk badly about his favorite Daddy.

Josephine smacked her lips. "Alright, alright. I won't talk about your Daddy anymore. Your Daddy is the best Daddy in the world. Happy now?"

Suddenly, Rose's phone started ringing. When Rose saw the name on the call notification, she threw the phone onto the coffee table in panic, then looked at Josephine with pleading eyes.

"Is that from my brother?" Josephine asked frantically.

"Yes." Rose's voice was dripping with anxiety.

"Reject the call!" Josephine said without thinking.

Rose was hesitant. At that time, Jenson Ares walked over to the coffee table and pressed the button to answer the call.

"Jenson, you traitor!" Josephine scolded Jenson quietly.

"Josephine Ares..." Jay's ice-cold voice was heard over the phone.

Josephine was scared out of her wits. She crawled to the phone and said weakly, "Where are you now, Brother? We're all worried about your safety!"

"Is Baby Robbie back home?" Jay did not have anything nice to say to his fickle sister.

Josephine sensed the hidden danger if she continued the conversation. She immediately crawled away. "I don't know. You should ask Sister-in-law."

Rose could do nothing else but pick up the

phone. "Baby Robbie is back. Thank you... Not only have you spent two hundred million on him, but you've also put yourself in danger..."

Rose had prepared a speech to thank Jay, but he interjected overbearingly. "Robbie is my son. If I don't save him, who will?"

Rose had no retort to that.

"Unit number?" Jay Ares asked after a short pause.

"Ah?" Rose had not comprehended his question.

Readers also enjoyed



Spoiled By The President: My W...

Romance Lovestory Love

644.8K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 97

Josephine stood opposite Rose and said with determination, "My brother is going to take his son away. Rose, don't tell him your house number!"

"Josephine!" Jay gritted his teeth and shouted through the loudspeaker.

Josephine was so frightened that her face turned green. She covered her mouth instantly and waved desperately at Rose.

Rose was silent for a while before she said the house number into the phone, "House number 618."

As soon as she told him, Jay hung up.

Josephine collapsed onto the sofa and scolded Rose, "Why did you tell him your address? Rose, don't you know that you'll lose Baby Robbie once he gets here?"

Jenson picked up a banana and stuffed it straight into Josephine's mouth. With a scornful look, he said, "You talk too much.

"

Josephine sat up, pointed at Jenson's nose, and cursed, "Don't think I don't know you, little guy. You're as calculating as your daddy. I know you're on your daddy's side—"

Jenson angrily said, "No, I'm not."

Josephine sneered. "Hehe, are you sure about that? Do you dare to say that your daddy is a big tiger who eats people up?"

Jenson loved Daddy. Naturally, he ignored his aunt's coercion to stir up trouble.

Josephine added smugly, "Jenson, do you have a conscience? Yes, you were brought up by your daddy, but you were inside of Rose for ten months. Do you know how hard it is for a pregnant lady? They have to bear a significant amount of weight gain in addition to their body changes. They even have to risk their lives to give birth. Now that your daddy's going to snatch Baby Robbie away, do you think what he's doing is right?"

Jenson said, "He won't."

Before they realized it, Jay was already leaning against the doorframe, listening to everything they were saying. When he heard Josephine trying to provoke his relationship with his son, his blood boiled.

When Rose saw Jay, she was worried that he would pick on Josephine. However, she soon discovered that Jay's eyes were only on Baby Robbie.

Jay ran up the stairs with beads of fine sweat across his forehead. He wanted to see Baby Robbie as soon as possible. The idea of seeing his son made him forget all his fatigue.

Rose knew what his eager eyes meant. She pulled Baby Robbie toward Jay and introduced him to Jay, "This is Baby Robbie."

Jay was shocked when he saw the kid who looked exactly like Jenson.

When Josephine told him that Baby Robbie and Jenson were twins, he never imagined that the two kids were identical

twins.

When Jay saw the mini version of him, he was sure that Robbie was an Ares boy even without a genetic test. That made Jay extremely excited. However, a little bit of fear still surfaced in him. When he thought about his proud self being indifferent toward Baby Robbie being kidnapped, all he wanted to do was slap himself.

Fortunately, Baby Robbie was safe. Otherwise, he would never be able to forgive himself for the rest of his life.

Although Baby Robbie and Daddy had met before, it was only for a few days.

However, Robbie had met him under the pretense of being Jenson, thus it still felt a little like stealing someone's paternal love.

Now that Daddy stood in front of him, he was unsure whether Daddy would accept him willingly. At that moment, Baby Robbie was extremely vulnerable.

Daddy spoiled Jenson rotten. Would Daddy spoil him just like how he spoiled

Chapter 97

Jenson? Baby Robbie had no idea what Daddy thought, so Robbie's handsome face looked a little sad.

@vamp20w01

Chapter 98

Jay suddenly squatted down and held Baby Robbie's face with both of his hands. His eyes were careful. He gave a look that yearned for Robbie's acceptance, which made him look like an innocent and naive little boy.

Rose observed the father and son cherishing each other with both joy and fear inside them. Jay's love for his son was more profound than she had imagined it would be.

"Daddy," Baby Robbie suddenly opened his arms and plunged into Jay's arms.

Jay hugged Baby Robbie tightly, his charming face blooming with a lovely and elegant smile.

Josephine walked toward Rose. As if to give her some strength, she suddenly reached out and held Rose's hand.

"Daddy, I love you." Baby Robbie kissed Jay on the forehead.

This action made Jay's heart throb. It also caught him off guard because he thought that with the unshakable hatred between him and Rose, the children she raised would also hate him deeply.

Instead, Baby Robbie's kiss and expression of love for him made him look at Rose with admiration.

She had not instilled hatred toward him in the child, and for that, he was very grateful.

"Daddy loves you too." Jay smiled softly at Baby Robbie.

Rose looked at the gentle Jay, the Jay she always dreamt of but never had.

Suddenly, Jay said, "Go home with Daddy, okay?"

A shiver ran down Rose's spine.

Josephine looked at the helpless, desperate, weak, and pitiful look on Rose's face. For some reason, she suddenly felt a sense of justice washing over her to support the weak. She stepped toward

them in two or three steps and shielded Baby Robbie behind her. She told Jay, "Jay, although Baby Robbie is a rightful descendant of the Ares Family, Rose is the one who was pregnant with him for ten months. She is the one who raised him, and she is the one who gave birth to these two sons for you. If you have Jenson, leave Baby Robbie with Rose. That's the only fair thing to do."

Jay's patience with his intruding sister had run out. "Josephine, you're not allowed to interfere in our affairs."

His cold tone, coupled with the oppressive and stern aura emitting from his body, scared Josephine to the extent that she began to watch her words.

When she tried talking to him again, Josephine's tone was a little imposing, "Jay, I'm only saying this for the sake of the kid. Look at how cute and lively Baby Robbie is. He's only this way because of Rose. Look at your Jens. He has the emotions of a rock! He's a cold and haughty boy because he grew up under your cold influence!"

Jay's face suddenly darkened, and Josephine fell silent.

Baby Robbie suddenly said, "Daddy, Aunty is right. Even though I love Daddy very much, I also love Mommy. Jens and I cannot be taken in by you alone. You can choose either Jens or me to accompany you... As long as the other person stays with Mommy."

Jay was shocked because he did not expect Baby Robbie to have such mature thinking. He was impressed by Baby Robbie's caring heart.

Jenson walked over and said, "Daddy, you can remarry Mommy. That way, you won't lose either one of us."

Jay stood up, unsteadily. His two sons were taking turns cornering him, catching him off guard.

For a moment, he probably lost his mind. After ruminating on it, he asked Rose insidiously, "So, what do you say?"

Chapter 99

Rose looked at him, staring at him blankly.

He would never agree to remarry her.

He was only determined to get Baby Robbie back.

It was because he did not want to be the bad guy in front of the kids, so he threw the problem to her instead.

He thought that Rose was weak and would obey him.

Unexpectedly, Rose firmly said, "Sir Ares, five years ago, I took the initiative and gave up the custody of the child. I will never do such a foolish thing again."

Jay looked at Rose with contempt, emphasizing every word he said next, "An Ares is always an Ares. All Areses will live together."

Both of them looked at each other, stubbornly and uncompromisingly.

After a long time, Jay turned his gaze toward the child and asked softly, "So, which one of you will go with Daddy tonight?"

Needless to say, those words were toward Baby Robbie and Jenson. Zetty was in tears in the corner.

Baby Robbie took the initiative to hold Rose's hand. He could see how weak and helpless Mommy was when Daddy and Mommy were competing. Therefore, he chose to stand beside Mommy at that time.

Jenson looked at Daddy's disappointed look, sighed to himself, and walked toward Jay. Jenson took Jay's hand and said, "Daddy and Mommy, Baby Robbie and I can take turns staying with either of you, just like the other day."

All of a sudden, Jay realized that the Jenson who behaved abnormally a few days ago, switching between quiet and talkative, was not because he had two personalities but because he was switching places with Baby Robbie.

He was not going to condemn the kids for doing so.

However, Jay rejected Jens's proposal. "Jens, you and Baby Robbie are brothers. Daddy won't let the two of you separate for too long."

When he finished his sentence, he hugged Jenson and left the apartment.

Rose slumped on the sofa because she knew that Jay's determination to compete for Baby Robbie was unshakable.

What was she to do?

At night, Jay laid on the bed with his eyes closed, but Baby Robbie's brilliant face preoccupied his mind.

"Daddy, Daddy." Baby Robbie's warm cheers filled his mind the entire time.

The next scene that filled his head was Baby Robbie protesting. "I might look a lot like you, but that's because your genes are bullies. Mommy's genes are too gentle and kind, so they're just hiding."

He also heard Baby Robbie's childlike

voice teasing him. "You can laugh if you want, Daddy. Why are you holding back your emotions? You're not a ninja turtle."

Jay suddenly sat up, but baby Robbie's face appeared in his head again.

He had a childlike gaze that publicly announced who he was. It was so young and tender that people would dare not disturb him.

He shook his head and tried to get that naughty child out of his mind, but Baby Robbie suddenly hugged his neck and gave him a big fat kiss on his face. With saliva smeared on Jay's face, he said, "Daddy, don't be angry. I'll tell you before I run away from home next time."

"Hmm, will there be another time?" He then remembered scolding him harshly for it.

The child said with confidence, "The moment you run away from home is fun, so if you always run away from home, it's always fun."

Baby Robbie—

Chapter 100

Jay felt that he was going insane. He had no reason to give up on such a cute boy like Baby Robbie. 'No, I must find a way to snatch Baby Robbie tomorrow.'

The next morning, Jay walked into the kitchen to prepare breakfast and brought out a serving size enough for three people. Jenson looked at the extra plate before shifting his gaze to the dark circles under his father's attractive peach eyes. He gave out a sigh.

"Why are you sighing?" Jay was cutting the steak in front of him and asked Jenson without looking up.

Jenson said with much sadness, "Daddy, when did you emulate Mommy by making an extra portion of breakfast? What a waste."

Jay was rather stunned. 'Rose has such a habit? She also suffers from missing someone?

'No, it's not the same.

'I've only gone through it for one day while she has been experiencing it for five years.'

At that moment, there was a tiny ripple in Jay's heart.

"Jens, tell me, do you like Baby Robbie?" Jay looked at the extra portion of breakfast and asked.

Jenson nodded with a small smile that lit up his cold expression. "Like."

"What do you like about him?" Jay was curious. Ever since Jenson was born, Jenson had always acted as if he was the world's strongest, non-conducting element. He was uninterested in anything in this world.

Jenson thought for a moment before answering seriously, "I don't know, but I do not have any reason to dislike him. Doesn't disliking him mean disliking myself?"

Jay was stunned.

This method of answering was very much

Jenson's style. However, to have such a wordy answer did not seem quite like Jenson as well.

Jay could feel the change within Jenson, and he was feeling glad about it. He felt that perhaps Baby Robbie was the reason for Jenson's changes. With such an overbearing affirmation, Jay was much more determined to get Baby Robbie on his side.

"Finish your breakfast, and I'll drop you at school later," Jay said.

Jenson blinked his starry-like eyes and seemed like he had some difficulty putting his thoughts into words. After some time, he finally plucked the courage to say, "Daddy, I wish to change to another kindergarten."

Jay recalled the unfair treatment Jenson had received at the kindergarten. He was initially angry at himself for not noticing these dirty things going on and not pulling Jenson out of such a polluted environment earlier. Now that Jenson mentioned it, Jay decided to go along with

it.

“Okay. Tell Daddy the criteria you want for your new school. I’ll try to find one that will make you satisfied,” Jay said.

This time, Jenson did not have a sliver of hesitation and blurted, “It’s fine as long as I’m in the same school as Baby Robbie and Zetty.”

Jay was dumbfounded.

‘I have the authority to decide which elite kindergarten Jens and Baby Robbie study in, but I have no authority on which school Zetty is to study at.

‘With Rose’s financial capabilities, I don’t think she can afford the standard of education that Jens and Baby Robbie are going to receive... Unless I help her out?

‘But why should I sponsor a child who has no blood-relations to me? Most importantly, she is Rose Loyle’s child!’

Somehow, whenever Jay thought about Zetty, a headache would loom over him and his brows would knit together tightly.

‘That rascal not only looks so much like

Rose, but her ability to infuriate people to no ends is also as strong as her mother's.'

"Jens, Daddy will discuss this with Rose."
For the sake of his children, he felt that he needed to talk about this matter with that infuriating Rose.

Readers also enjoyed



Revenge of the Hideous Lady

Love

lovestory

Romance

175.7K readers Recommend Reading

@vamp20w0111

Chapter 101

Jay sent a message to Rose, inviting her out to a café.

Rose looked at that domineering message that said, 'We should discuss Baby Robbie's custody rights. Otherwise, I'll have to use other methods.'

Rose sighed heavily. Could she pretend that she did not see this message?

Perhaps it was because of Rose's late reply to his message that Jay gave her a call.

Rose hesitated for some time before answering it reluctantly.

Jay's icy cold voice sounded across the line, "Rose Loyle, why didn't you reply to my message? Avoiding me isn't going to solve the problem."

Rose shot back meekly, "I'm not avoiding, I just didn't know how I should reply to you."

Jay was stunned by that answer but only

for a split second.

He chided, "If you knew this was going to happen, why did you do so in the first place?"

Rose trembled a little. That sentence was referring to the time she had sex with him against his will.

Rose's expression turned ugly and embarrassed. She felt fortunate that he could not see her expression right now, thus she could relax a little. "Okay. We'll meet at ten o'clock." She finally went for it.

Jay hung up the phone decisively.

On the other hand, Rose slumped onto the ground. The disdain that Jay had against her stemmed from him not having any feelings for her. However, she loved him. It was like her pouncing into the flames. She would have no qualms even if she were to be swallowed by those heartlessly burning flames.

'Do I regret it now?'

Rose did not know the answer to that

question. She just knew that since she had the bravery to commit a mistake, then she should have the bravery to face the consequences.

She patted herself awake and did a simple touch up by applying some light makeup to cover up her exhaustion and haggard appearance. She needed to make herself more presentable.

Before Rose left the apartment, Josephine arrived at Exuberant City to bring Baby Robbie and Zetty out to play. Rose was very much at ease since Josephine was very enthusiastic about helping her take care of the kids.

When Rose arrived at the café, Jay had already been seated for some time.

When Rose walked up to Jay, his expression was very hostile. His gaze was glaring at her, shooting out daggers.

"I'm sorry for being late," Rose timidly said. When she pulled the chair next to him, she noticed that his eagle-like gaze squinted even more, showing an obvious loathing toward her actions.

Rose placed the chair in its original position and chose the farthest seat opposite him.

Jay's expression softened slightly. 'Thank goodness she knows her place.'

Rose was feeling a sense of displeasure. She was wondering what the fuss was about.

"Rose, I do not have much free time. Let's get to the chase.

"I'm very much determined to get the custody rights for Baby Robbie. If you cooperate, I'll give you a sum of money which will be enough for you and your daughter to live a comfortable life. Of course, if you refuse to cooperate, then we will need to go to court. However, with option two, I don't think you have the capability to fight against us."

He was like a high and mighty king looking scornfully at Rose who was like a defenseless ant.

Rose may be like an ant, but she was an ant with dreams. She may be a weed, but

she was a weed that would set the prairie ablaze. She had Angeline Severe's stubbornness and refusal to admit defeat, and she also had Rose Loyle's weak and delicate nature. Such contrasting personalities blended well to help her become a multifaceted woman. This was the new Rose Loyle.

At least, Jay would never be able to guess what her temper was going to be in the next moment.

Rose abruptly looked up. Her weak demeanor was no longer in sight. It was replaced with anger as she said, "Sir Ares, are you bullying the weak?"

Jay raised his brows, looking extraordinarily arrogant. "So what?"

He sat back against the black armchair. His slender and fair fingers were tapping on the table rhythmically. That relaxed yet dignified posture made him look very charming and confident.

Rose did not know how to react to his blunt admission, thus she could only respond unyieldingly.

“You’ve said that you’re busy, but children need their parents to be there for them as they grow up. Do you even have the time to accompany them after stealing away Baby Robbie’s custody?”

Jay laid his gaze fully on Rose. ‘It’s unexpected of her to think about that.’

“I admit that I won’t have much time to accompany them, but I can hire the world’s best and outstanding tutors for them, giving them the best resources. Unlike you. What can you provide them other than a small house and unhealthy instant noodles?” Jay said righteously.

Rose was not about to admit defeat as she corrected him. “I don’t give the kids instant noodles. What we eat is called plain Yang Chun Noodles.”

Jay chuckled. “Is there a difference? Rose, eating plain Yang Chun noodles will affect the children’s growth. Do you want them to be a dwarf like you in the future?”

Rose nearly choked on her saliva. She might be petite, but her height was at

least 1.6 meters. How could he call her a dwarf?

Rose was not going down easily. "Jens eats delicious and luxurious food all the time with you, but I don't see him any taller than Baby Robbie."

Jay was rendered speechless at that moment.

After a pause, Jay looked at her with disdain and mockery. "You'll have to blame your substandard genes."

This was a blatant personal attack on her. Rose's expression turned sulky and angry.

Jay realized that he had made a stupid move. Regardless of his lack of feelings for this woman, she was his sons' mom. To degrade her like this was degrading his sons as well.

In his point of view, Jenson and Baby Robbie were the world's cutest babies. They were a world of difference compared to Rose.

Chapter 102

Jay said with a straight face, "Rose, you give me Baby Robbie's custody and I'll allow you to keep your visitation rights for the first five years."

Rose widened her eyes in disbelief. "This is too absurd. He not only wants to take away Baby Robbie's custody rights from me, but he also wants to take away my visitation rights in the future!"

If this was tolerable, there would be no more intolerable things in this world!

Rose stood up with her hands curled into fists as she placed them on the tabletop. With her body leaning forward, she emphasized each word through gritted teeth, "In your dreams."

The challenge in her eyes was very sharp.

Jay remained as cool as a cucumber. He was a brilliant king of the business world. He had experienced many negotiations and met many negotiators. He felt that a

lowly housewife like Rose Loyle was no match for him.

“Name your price. How much before you’re willing to give up Baby Robbie’s custody?” Jay casually said.

Rose felt that she was being humiliated. She was fuming mad to the point that her internal organs were bouncing within her out of fury. She glared at Jay and said, “Sir Ares, do you think your money can wipe away my love for Baby Robbie and allow you to take away his custody from me this easily?”

Jay’s mesmerizing lips curved into a cunning smile. In his world, if money could not solve the problem, that only meant that the amount was not enough.

He thought that Rose’s angry reaction was because she wanted to bargain for a higher price.

“One billion,” Jay said.

Rose was so angry that her body was trembling. Without warning, she suddenly lifted her cup of tea and

splashed it at Jay. "Jay Ares, I'll be frank. I don't want it even if you give me the whole of Grand Asia. In my heart, Baby Robbie is my life."

Jay looked at his shirt that was stained with tea. His eagle eyes emitted icy frost as he said between clenched teeth, "Rose Loyle..." That dark and dangerous tone pulled Rose's sanity back to the present.

Rose realized that she had stirred trouble again.

Jay stood up and looked at Rose with much displeasure. "Acting pure? Great. Money-wise, don't expect me to give you a single cent now. As for Baby Robbie, I'm getting him regardless." He then left after throwing those words at her.

Rose was so angry that she kicked the legs of the table.

Before Jay left, the gaze he gave her was too eerie. It was as if he was the grim reaper, preparing to pull her into the underworld.

After leaving the café, Rose loitered

around the busy streets with thoughts running through her head. The prosperous City South was perfumed with the intoxicating smell of copper in every corner.

For example, those passing luxury cars ruthlessly refreshed one's principles. Not all vehicles with four tires could be labeled as a car. The attitude of those car owners who relied heavily on wealth to exhibit their arrogance was the key factor.

From the luxury car owner's point of view, Rose was like a pathetic beggar, living at the bottom of the social ladder.

She dejectedly sat at the steps of a hotel. Because of her depressed look and messy hair, she received pittance from pedestrians. Some even threw her a few bills of money.

Rose suddenly laughed...

It turned out that she had been lying to herself all these while, turning a blind eye toward the vast difference between herself and Jay.

He was the chosen one by the heavens!

She was merely an insignificant being living at the bottom rung of society.

However, she had always seen herself as that glamorous Angeline Severe of the past. The one who could stand by his side and was at par with him because they were a match made in heaven.

Readers also enjoyed



Wanted: Billionaire's Wife And T...

Romance

Love

lovestory

39.1K readers Recommend Reading

@vamp20w01

Chapter 103

She was wrong.

He hated her strongly, he loathed her background, and he despised the fact that she could not see how lowly her status was.

In the end, she was destined to become a joke in his heart from the moment she approached him.

Rose left the steps and loitered along the busy streets in the city.

After walking for a long time, her heart gradually quieted down.

A stubborn feeling was boiling within her soul. She refused to admit defeat. The reason why Jay was looking down on her was that she did not have a proper job and substantial financial security.

Financial security was the determiner for climbing up the social ladder. She was determined to retrieve back her lost dignity and decency. She was going to

have to do that by building up her very own business empire.

Rose's drive for entrepreneurship was bubbling!

There was a time where she had willingly hidden all her sharp edges for Jay's sake. She was willing to humble herself by living in the mansion at Horizon Colors and being the obedient wife supporting him from behind.

However, she had not received his appreciation. Instead, he looked down on her even more.

Rose finally woke up from her daydreams. She had hidden her edges for him and lost her ambition in the process, which was her most valuable asset. Only with ambition could she protect her family and perhaps resurrect her dead love too. ①

With new goals and dreams, Rose was like a wilted plant that received nourishment. She was now ready to get a second lease on life.

She combed her messy hair and looked

radiantly glowing.

Back at the apartment, Rose looked at her humble abode and swore an oath to herself. "Jay Ares, today you treated me like I'm someone dispensable. One day, you'll feel that I'm above your league."

...

On the other side, Jay had failed to subdue Rose with monetary gains, thus he was busy executing his plan B.

Within a night, he had cut off the Loyle family's businesses and caused them to be faced at the brink of bankruptcy.

Royan Loyle had no other escape route and decided to commit suicide by jumping off a building. That scene was recorded by onlookers and quickly became the hottest news the next day.

Royan had been rescued by a kind samaritan.

Initially, this matter had nothing to do with Rose because as the illegitimate daughter of the Loyle family, she had been chased out and considered an

outsider long ago.

However, life was always unfair.

When Royan was at a dead end with debts that stacked as high as a skyscraper, a wave of condemning voices flooded the web. The netizens were all scolding Rose. As a daughter of the Loyle family, she was being so cold-blooded and heartless for not giving a helping hand to the Loyle family.

Royan went along and acted like a kind and compassionate father figure.

He openly repented his wrongdoings in front of reporters. "Rose, I've done you wrong. I shouldn't have treated you that way. I'm old and do not have much time left. I just hope that I will be able to receive your forgiveness before my time is up. By the way, I've amended my will a few days ago and will be giving you 50% of Loyle Enterprise's shares!"

Rose immediately hacked into the internal server of Loyle Enterprise and tearlessly cried when she saw that their financial deficit was like a bottomless pit.

Royan Loyle was being so 'kind' toward this daughter of his!

When Rose marched over to the Loyle residence to demand an explanation, Royan no longer had his kind fatherly image that he displayed in public.

Instead, he barked at her, "Rose Loyle, why haven't you died!"

@vamp20w0111

Chapter 104

Rose had long been immune to her father's heartless attitude. She raised her brows and coldly replied, "If you wish for me to die outside, I can promise you that I will never appear in front of you again."

"Hmph. You can die if you want to, but you must help Loyle Enterprise tide through the storm first," Royan shamelessly said.

Rose scoffed. "On what basis should I help Loyle Enterprise? All these years, you never bothered to know if I was still alive or dead out there. When you were still rich, you never once thought about me. Now that you're at your wits ends, I suddenly appear in your mind. Let me ask you, where did you find the audacity to pass on such a huge debt to me?"

Rose's stepmother came out and said with a disdainful tone, "Rose Loyle, don't act like you're holier than us. Do you dare to say that you have nothing to do with our Loyle family's bankruptcy? Grand

Asia belongs to your ex-husband. You must have offended him for Grand Asia to suddenly oppress our business. Since you have caused this trouble, it's only right for you to fix it."

Rose finally understood what was happening. This was all an act of revenge from Jay Ares.

Rose took a look at Royan. The middle-aged man who had never even batted an eye when he walked past her previously now looked like he aged 20 years with his whole head of grey hair.

Jay was ruthless indeed!

Right now, Royan was looking at Rose like he was looking at his savior. "Rose, I heard that you're fighting with Jay for your children's custody rights. As long as you give the custody rights to Master Ares, he will stop punishing Loyle Enterprise."

Rose smirked. "Why should I sell my child to save you all from a crisis?"

Royan's gaze darkened as he unwillingly

offered, "I will reimburse you for the loss of your child. I will amend my will and give you 5% of Loyle Enterprise's shares."

She scoffed at that. '5% of Loyle Enterprise's shares? He's offering me that meager amount for my Baby Robbie?'

'What a joke. They think that I'm a person who has never seen money and will do anything for money?'

Rose looked at Royan and said with a disdainful tone, "Dad, do you know why Jay Ares is punishing Loyle Enterprise? Because his 10 billion offer couldn't get him Baby Robbie's custody. You want me to give up Baby Robbie's custody with a mere 5% shares of Loyle Enterprise? It's a loss for me to do business with you. I might as well discuss with Jay." Rose turned around to leave.

Royan clenched his teeth and increased his offer. "30%?"

Rose burst in laughter.

'Does he think that I'm an easily manipulated fool?'

If she was the original Rose Loyle, perhaps she could not see the vast difference between 30% shares of the Loyle Enterprise and Jay's 10 billion.

Unfortunately, she was Angeline Severe. She was well-versed with the management of a family business and financial control.

"Dad, with the current situation that Loyle Enterprise is in, that 30% of your shares are just a burden for me. How can it be as practical as 10 billion in cash?"

Royan did not expect his daughter to have become much savvier after coming back from abroad. It was as if she had gilded a layer of gold in her brains. "40%. No more than that. It's my limit!"

Before Rose could respond, her stepmother leaped forward abruptly and gave a tight slap across Rose's cheek.

"Stupid b*tch, you're nothing but a dog in our family. It's your fortune to receive 5% of shares. Who gave you such a huge appetite to try to take over our Loyle

Enterprise? I'm warning you, with me around, you'll never get it!"

Rose rubbed her burning cheeks as her gaze turned menacing.

Growing up as Angeline Severe, she had never experienced being hit.

She raised her hand and returned a tight slap to her stepmother!

"Loyle Enterprise? Ha, I'm not interested."

"Ahh! B*tch! How dare you hit me?" her stepmother wailed. 1

Readers also enjoyed



Wrong Ride, Right Lover

Romance

Love

lovestory

30.3K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 105

Royan could not believe what he witnessed. He did not think that Rose would have turned into a completely different person. In the past, she would only shed silent tears regardless of how they bullied her.

However, today she not only showed no respect, but she even hit her stepmother.

“Rose Loyle, are you revolting?!” Royan picked up a stack of documents that were on the table, planning to throw it at Rose.

Rose did not budge a bit. Her blood-shot eyes were staring straight at Royan. “If you lay a finger on me today, I will make this into tomorrow’s headlines and break all relations with the Loyle family. I will sit and watch Grand Asia buy over Loyle Enterprise. I will watch how you all will turn from a life of intoxicating riches into beggars. I’ll see all of you walking toward the lowly life I used to live...”

The folder in Royan’s hand fell. He was

used to a life of riches and being respected by most people. He would rather die than to return to a life of poverty.

“Rose, I’m your father. Are you going to just watch Loyle Enterprise which I’ve worked so hard to build get destroyed just like that?”

Rose’s lips curved into a smile. Since the Loyle family wanted to pull her into these muddy waters, she was going to use the gravestone of Loyle Enterprise as her stepping stone.

“I can help you, but with one condition,” Rose said.

“What condition?”

Rose shifted her icy glare toward her stepmother. She could not forgive this woman when she thought about the pain this woman had given to the original Rose Loyle.

“Firstly, ask her to kowtow to me and admit her wrongdoings.”

“Impossible. Rose Loyle, who do you

think you are?" her stepmother bellowed.

"Kneel," Royan ordered her stepmother.

Rose's stepmother looked at her husband who was usually always obedient with disbelief. She yelled sharply, "I'm not going to kneel to this b*tch!" The very next moment, she pulled Royan's hand and begged, "Hubby, can't you see who is the cause for the downfall of our Loyle family?"

Royan looked at Rose with anger.

Rose understood that Royan wished that he could strangle her to death. However, he needed her help.

Rose said, "You can think of me as the cause for this, but don't you forget that you should get the person who tied the bell on the tiger to take it off. You still need me to save Loyle Enterprise."

Rose understood that she needed to give the heartless Loyle family a taste of their own medicine for them to learn their lesson.

Her stepmother balefully cursed Rose, "

Rose Loyle, what a b*tch! How can you be so shameless?"

Rose smirked and returned a question, "You replaced my mother and are sleeping in the bed that should be my mother's. You're spending the money that should be spent by my mother. You even threw difficulties into my mother's way instead of lending a helping hand when she fell ill back then. Aren't you shameless as well then?"

Her stepmother's expression was livid.

Royan's infidelity during his first marriage and making his legal daughter into his illegitimate daughter was the Loyle family's biggest scandal.

Rose looked at Royan, waiting for his reaction.

Royan closed his unwilling eyes as he barked at Rose's stepmother, "Why haven't you knelt?"

The stepmother was flabbergasted as she stared at Royan. "You're doing this to me for an illegitimate daughter?"

Royan bellowed, "Kneel."

The stepmother clenched her teeth and knelt helplessly, but her bloodshot eyes glared at Rose like sharp daggers.

@vamp20w0111

Chapter 106

Rose smirked. "That's the way. Although we are a family, we still need to settle our scores clearly! Another thing, don't you dare call me an illegitimate daughter. You're more clear than anybody else whether this is the truth or not."

Her stepmother was filled with so much hatred that her eyes could go up in flames.

Royan was holding back his emotions to the point that his facial expression was beginning to twitch. "Will you agree to help Loyle Enterprise now?"

Rose paused before saying, "Transfer the whole of Loyle Enterprise to my name. In the future, all of you will have no connection to it whether the company is profiting or losing, deal?"

Royan froze on the spot.

"Rose Loyle, you want to take over Loyle Enterprise?" her stepmother said between gritted teeth.

Rose said, "Isn't this what you all want? Making me shoulder all the debts? You must be well aware that me taking over Loyle Enterprise during this period of time is a dangerous move that might end up badly. It's up to you to decide if you want to accept my offer."

"Haha." A mocking laugh was heard coming from upstairs.

It was Rose's half-sister from a different mother, Sydney Loyle. She was seen standing by the handrail, looking down at Rose. She was dressed in brilliant red pajamas with a cigarette between her fingers. Her curly hair was tied into a bun on the top of her head. She was looking stylish and dignified.

"Rose Loyle, you're so stupid and ignorant. Are you trying to take over Loyle Enterprise for yourself while we're faced with a crisis?" Sydney held onto the handrail as she walked down elegantly.

When Sydney stood in front of Rose, she attempted to slap Rose, but Rose was much more agile and grabbed Sydney's

wrist.

Rose coldly said, "Little Sister, is this your way of welcoming me when I just got home? Where are your manners?"

Sydney ridiculed back. "Then where were your manners when you slapped my mother?"

"Your mother snatched another woman's man by being a mistress, so what manners did she have?" Rose taunted.

Sydney turned melancholy. "You..."

Rose disdainfully flung off Sydney's hand and took out a piece of tissue to wipe her hand.

Sydney glared at Rose angrily before she walked toward Royan.

"Dad, Loyle Enterprise is in quite a tight spot, but if you give Loyle Enterprise to her, we will be left with nothing. I have a way to save Loyle Enterprise. I know the assistant of Grand Asia's president. His name is Grayson. I'll try to plead with him and put in some good words for Loyle Enterprise with Master Ares. I'm

sure Master Ares will let go of Loyle Enterprise.”

Sydney balefully glared at Rose as she said that.

“When that time comes, I will personally inform Master Ares that Rose Loyle is nothing but a dog in our family and that we have kicked her out a long time ago. As long as I can explain the situation clearly to Master Ares, he will not punish Loyle Enterprise for Rose’s wrong deeds.”

The evil stepmother continued to cajole, “That’s right, hubby. Sydney has a point. Master Ares must be unclear with the situation of our family, and that’s why he poured his anger on you. As long as we tell the truth to Master Ares and you issue a legal notice to sever your relationship with Rose, I’m sure Master Ares will not be so unreasonable.”

Royan became hesitant when he heard that.

When the stepmother noticed Royan’s reaction, she ridiculed Rose. “Rose Loyle, scam this instant! Do you think that we

cannot survive without you?”

Sydney scorned at Rose as well. “Do you think that you’re someone significant? Hmph. I’ve heard from Grayson that Master Ares hates you to the core, to the extent that he won’t let you into the Ares family even after you gave birth to his children.”

Rose ignored Sydney and continued to look at Royan.

Royan finally made the difficult decision and nodded. “Sydney, Loyle Enterprise’s fate is in your hand!”

Sydney proudly stared at Rose like a triumphant rooster that had won a fight.

Rose pulled an unreadable smile. “Be careful.”

‘Ha, does the Loyle family think that they can be saved just by knowing Jay’s assistant?’

...

The next day, Sydney dressed to the nines to meet Grayson who she thought was a

good friend of hers.

“Sydney, what brings you to Grand Asia?” Grayson already knew her intentions.

“Grayson, I have a favor to ask from you.” Sydney ignored any pleasantries and went straight for the kill.

Grayson had a crush on her when they were in high school. Up till now, he remained single. Sydney thought that he still held a torch for her.

Sydney was a pretty girl, the sexy type. She was a natural stunner. She was also good at using her beauty to get the things she wanted.

Grayson looked embarrassed and said, “If you’ve come to ask for my help in regards to Loyle Enterprise’s crisis, I have no ways to help you. However, considering our long friendship, I can let you know that you can try asking Rose for help. As long as she agrees to release the custody of her children, my president will let Loyle Enterprise go.”

Sydney’s expression looked disconcerted

when she heard that. The reason why she had come to meet Grayson was that she did not want to ask Rose for help.

Who would have expected that Grayson would ask her to seek Rose's help instead?

She had boastfully announced her impending victory in front of Rose and her parents. Was she going to be shamed if she failed to save Loyle Enterprise?

"Grayson, I'm out of ways, and that's why I came to you. Please let me meet Master Ares. I want to explain to him that Rose is merely my father's illegitimate daughter and has already been chased out of the Loyle family. Master Ares has no reason to put his displeasure toward Rose on the innocent Loyle Enterprise..."

Grayson replied, "There's no use for you to tell these to Master Ares. His principle in business is that the spoils go to the winner. What else can you all do?"

Sydney had come with confidence that she was going to ace it with Grayson, but she was filtered by Grayson even before meeting Master Ares. She was unwilling

to give up.

“Grayson, what do I need to do for you to help me?” She suddenly tugged on the collar of her chiffon dress. Her intentions of seduction were plain to see.

Grayson sighed inwardly. ‘A pretty yet modest woman is an endangered species nowadays.’

“Sydney, go home. Master Ares does not meet any women other than for business-related issues.” Grayson then turned to leave.

Sydney was stunned on the spot. She thought that she would have a guaranteed win. She did not expect that it would be so difficult to even meet Master Ares.

Chapter 107

Jay had turned the grudge between Rose and himself into a sanction by Grand Asia toward Loyle Enterprise. That infuriated Rose very much.

She may hate Royan very much, but the staff working under Loyle Enterprise were innocent. Many people were going to lose their jobs if Loyle Enterprise went into bankruptcy.

Rose was a kind person by nature and did not want to create so much bad karma, thus she angrily marched over to Grand Asia to try to talk some sense into Jay. She did not expect to bump into her half-sister, Sydney, who was on her way out.

Sydney looked at her cheaply-dressed older half-sister. She admitted that Rose did look attractive to a certain degree. However, to wear a few hundred Yuan worth of clothes and appear in Grand Asia, a place located in one of the upper-class areas, Rose was like Granny Liu visiting the Grand View Gardens—a

shameful sight.

“What are you doing here?” Sydney folded her arms with a disdainful look at Rose.

Rose had guessed Sydney’s intentions of appearing at Grand Asia, thus she approached Sydney and kindly asked, “Has he agreed to let go of Loyle Enterprise?”

Embarrassment washed across Sydney’s face. She had not even laid eyes on Jay. Rose hit the sore spot immediately, which was also Sydney’s biggest shame.

Sydney examined Rose’s budget clothing and disdainfully said, “Rose, are you trying to embarrass the Loyle family by wearing such cheap clothing to Grand Asia?”

Rose straightened her back. “What I wear has nothing to do with you.” With that said, Rose abandoned Sydney and headed for the elevator.

‘Since we do not have a common interest, there is no need for us to speak any more!’

Sydney immediately caught up. "What are you going to do?"

The two sisters took the same elevator, and Sydney began her interrogation toward Rose. Rose shot a quick glance at Sydney and plainly said, "Look for Jay Ares!"

"Hmph..." Sydney scoffed. She felt that if a relatively famous beauty within the Imperial Capital like herself could not get an audience with Master Ares, then there was no chance for an illiterate country bumpkin like Rose to do so.

"Don't blame me for not reminding you. Master Ares has a bad temper. He'll probably throw a woman who hasn't made any prior appointments to meet him into the sea to feed the sharks."

Rose said, "Leave now if you're afraid."

Sydney thought about it for a moment before cocking her head up, feeling rather conceited. "Why should I be afraid since you're not? Perhaps I can help you put in a few good words when we meet Master

Ares to prevent him from making things difficult for you.”

Rose smirked. “I wonder who will be the rescuer and who will be the rescued one later?”

Ding! The elevator arrived on the ninth floor of Grand Asia. Sydney looked at the floor that the elevator stopped on and thought aloud, “Hey, how did you know that Jay Ares’ office is on the ninth floor?”

“Been here.” Rose exited the elevator and walked straight toward Jay’s private office.

Sydney was worried that she would be left behind and quickly followed suit.

Rose stood outside the door to the presidential office and paused her steps. She took a few deep breaths as if preparing herself mentally for a fierce protracted war that was about to come.

“Why? Feeling afraid?” Sydney’s heart was beating rapidly without notice, but she still put up an arrogant front.

Chapter 108

Rose kicked the office door open, causing a loud bang to be heard. Jay, who was deeply concentrated on going through some documents, abruptly looked up.

When he saw Rose and her sister, his gaze turned icy cold.

Rose huffed angrily as she marched toward him...

In contrast, Sydney was trembling as she inched forward. She was observing Jay's expression fearfully. Seeing how there was no bigger reaction from his handsome face, Sydney did not want to lose to Rose and plucked up the courage to walk over.

Jay raised his head. His breathtakingly sharp gaze locked on Rose as he spoke confidently, "Rose Loyle, are you here to hand over Baby Robbie's custody?"

Agitation flashed across Rose's eyes. "Jay, you're a scoundrel. How could you

apply sanction on Loyle Enterprise just to get Baby Robbie's custody rights from me?"

A layer of frost coated Jay's handsome looks as he threw the pen that was in his hand. 'I thought that Rose was here to obediently hand over Baby Robbie's custody rights to me. It turns out that she's here to question my actions.

'What bravery.'

Sydney regretted following Rose here. Her innards were turning blue! She had thought that she could gain some leverage by following Rose here. She did not expect that Rose was here to deliver her death. Seeing how Master Ares was fuming madly, Sydney just wanted to look for a hole to escape out of.

"Loyle Enterprise is poorly managed, therefore they are now faced with bankruptcy. What has it got to do with me?" Jay's tone remained carefree.

Rose felt flustered and exasperated. "Jay Ares, you dare to do it but do not dare to admit to it!"

Jay's seductive pair of beautiful peach eyes looked as if they were covered with ice. He suddenly stood up and recounted the few crimes Rose had done in the past. "Rose Loyle, you've slept with me, slapped me, splashed tea at me, and even scolded me... If I still have any patience for you, won't it seem like I'm being too merciful toward you? And won't you be indulged into becoming someone lawless and without fear of me anymore?"

Sydney sucked in a breath of cold air as she fearfully looked at Rose. She cursed inwardly. "This woman has offended Master Ares to the core. Won't I be pulled into this because of her?"

Rose looked at the man who had a deathly aura surrounding him. She had to admit that she was feeling afraid, but she still straightened her neck and returned the same words. "You've compelled me to do so. Sleeping with you, slapping you, splashing tea at you... They were all appropriate self-defense measures. If I had not defended myself, you... You'd think that I'm a pushover whom you can

easily manipulate.”

Jay walked around his office table and stood in front of Rose, looking down at her from above. “Rose, the Loyle family has been so heartless toward you. Why do you repay their evil deeds with kindness by interceding on their behalf?”

Sydney was muddled. ‘If Master Ares knows that Rose is not on good terms with the Loyle family, then why did he still put the blame on Loyle Enterprise?’

“Master Ares... Loyle Enterprise has no grudges with you... Why do you want to seal off Loyle Enterprise?” Sydney stuttered as she asked.

Jay’s disdainful gaze swept across Sydney. He did not want to waste any saliva on a low IQ woman like Sydney who could only become a decorative piece.

Rose angrily spat, “You’ve dragged our personal grudge into the business world. If you don’t stop this, there will be plenty of people losing their jobs. Many families will be faced with an economic crisis because of us. Sir Ares, repent on your

wrongdoings. Perhaps you can consider it as collecting good karma for your children.”

Rose continued, “I know that you have sinister intentions. The Loyle family may not be treating me well, but they are where I came from. By pulling out my roots, I’ll be like a building without a proper foundation. There is zero chance for a weak woman like me to rise again. I will never have the ability to fight over Baby Robbie’s custody with you. Jay Ares, you’ve given much thought on this.”

Rose curled her hand into a fist and angrily shouted, “I didn’t know that you feared a woman like me!”

Readers also enjoyed



I Win You (Indonesia)

Sweet

Possessive

Badboy

2.7K readers Recommend Reading

Chapter 109

Jay looked at the arrogant woman in front of him. He savagely pinched her mouth so tightly that it went out of shape. "Why will I be scared of a salted fish like you?"

Rose laughed wantonly. "Even a salted fish will have a day where it will flip over. I knew it. It's because I broke the code for Qilin's website that you now fear me, isn't it? You're afraid that I'll grow stronger and will have the capability to fight for Baby Robbie's custody with you!"

Her mouth was being pinched by Jay, thus her speech was somewhat incoherent. However, her arrogance and domineering gaze were clear to see.

Jay sullenly looked at the woman who did not know her limitations and scoffed. "Are you expecting to overtake me with some minimal hacker skills? What an idiotic dream."

Rose was not having any idiotic dreams. She was not just a hacker, she was also

the young mistress of the Severe family! She learned how to run the family business from her grandfather since she was a child. Also, she was the gifted businesswoman among her siblings, so much so that her grandfather always had a never-ending stream of praises for her.

Since she had the needed knowledge regarding business management and had the skills of a top hacker, what she lacked was time and opportunity. If those were out of the way, she could definitely build her own business empire.

"I'm not dreaming."

"Are you going to break the earth into half if I give you a rod?" Jay ridiculed Rose's boastful attitude.

"Sir Ares, do not judge a book by its cover!"

Jay felt that talking with a person who knew no shame like Rose was just a waste of his time. He furiously said, "Rose Loyle, I let you retain your dignity and pride only because you're Jenson and Baby Robbie's mother. If you continue to

provoke me without any boundaries, don't blame me if I become ruthless toward you."

Rose was dumbstruck.

She had been curious all this while. She had lost her temper at him a few times. She thought that he would punish her with extreme methods, but eventually, he would always swallow his anger without a counterattack.

Today, she realized that it was only for Jenson and Baby Robbie that he was being extraordinarily merciful toward her.

Rose suddenly smiled slightly. 'So, this fella has a trigger as well. His love for his sons is extremely deep.'

Jay saw that Rose's expression seemed to have softened and had a bad feeling about it.

"Sir Ares... My trigger was never the Loyle family. However, I think I've found your trigger." Rose showed off.

Jay looked at her and coldly warned, "I'll see if you dare to do anything about it."

Rose would never use her sons to fight against this demon. After all, she loved Jenson and Baby Robbie as well. However, it seemed fun to scare this man.

“Sir Ares, you must have heard that a dog can jump fences when cornered. If you don’t go overboard, I won’t mess with your trigger.”

“What do you want?” Jay asked sharply.

Rose leisurely admired her nails and casually said, “You’re busy with work most of the time. Don’t waste your energy fighting me. Otherwise...”

Her expression turned grim. “I’ll take Baby Robbie out of the country. I’ll make him practice western cultures, date western girls, and turn him into a completely westernized person.”

Jay’s cold demeanor did not turn angry. Instead, he smirked. “You’re threatening me?”

“Yes.” Rose stood up straight and held her head high.

Sydney closed her eyes... ‘Rose is digging

her own grave. I should escape while I still can.'

"Master Ares, I have other errands to run. I'll make a move first."

@vamp20w0111

Chapter 110

Before Sydney could finish her pleasantries, Jay yelled at her, "Scram!"

Sydney was so frightened that she stumbled her way out.

The room was left with only Rose and Jay now. Both of them were glaring at each other with raging eyes. The atmosphere in the room was suppressed to its lowest.

"Rose, how bold of you to threaten me. Do you know that after all these years, you're the first person who dares to threaten me?" Jay clenched his teeth.

Rose smiled victoriously. "Thanks for the honor!"

Jay's expression turned dark. "Since you want to leave Imperial City, I'll immediately book a flight for you and your daughter! As for Baby Robbie, you can forget about ever bringing him away."

Rose suddenly laughed. It was a bitter kind of laugh.

Jay treated Jenson and Baby Robbie like his precious gems, yet he could abandon her and their daughter. However, Zetty was also his daughter. Was it not cruel and unfair for Zetty that he was treating her so coldly and heartlessly?

“Sir Ares, I won’t give you Baby Robbie,” Rose said with gritted teeth.

Jay returned to his seat, resuming his elegant and dignified appearance. “I’ll be waiting.”

Rose scoffed before leaving.

When she left Jay’s office, she received a call from her mother.

This was completely unexpected. Ever since her mother was admitted under Grand Asia, Jay had been controlling her mother tightly. Not only could she not see her mother, but she could not even make a phone call to her.

Rose immediately answered the call to hear her mother wail, “Rosy, I’ve finally gotten a suitable donor kidney, but the doctors in Grand Asia are saying that you

refused to pay the procedure fees so they can't proceed with the surgery. Rosy, is this true?

"How can you be so heartless? If you don't have the money, you could have sold the house at Splendid Town. How can you not save me? Why is your heart so cruel?"

Before Rose could defend herself, she heard the doctors over the phone reprimanding, "Dear patient, you can't be too emotional. If the vital signs of your body have any extreme changes, you might be faced with a critical condition..."

Subsequently, her mother's call was cut off.

The innocent Rose had just gotten reprimanded by her mother heartlessly. Her heart was feeling extremely hurt. Rose slowly turned around to see Jay walking out of his office in high spirits. She had the urge to rip him apart at that moment.

Jay leisurely strolled over to Rose with a victor's smile. "How now, Rose? Do you still want to press on my trigger point? I'

m waiting.”

He walked past Rose arrogantly. Rose suddenly reached out to pull his hand. Her expression looked dull as her tone turned low. “What do you want before you stop harming my mother?”

“You already know that I only want one thing... Baby Robbie’s custody rights.”

Rose glared at him depressingly...

To get Baby Robbie’s custody rights, he sanctioned against Loyle Enterprise and intimidated her gravely-ill mother. He had lost all conscience.

Rose abruptly released his hand and stumbled as she left. She was not going to admit defeat until the last minute.

Jay watched the petite figure along the walkway. She seemed to have immense perseverance. His gaze became deep and unfathomable.

‘Just a salted fish. I’ll like to see what you have to save yourself from this situation...’